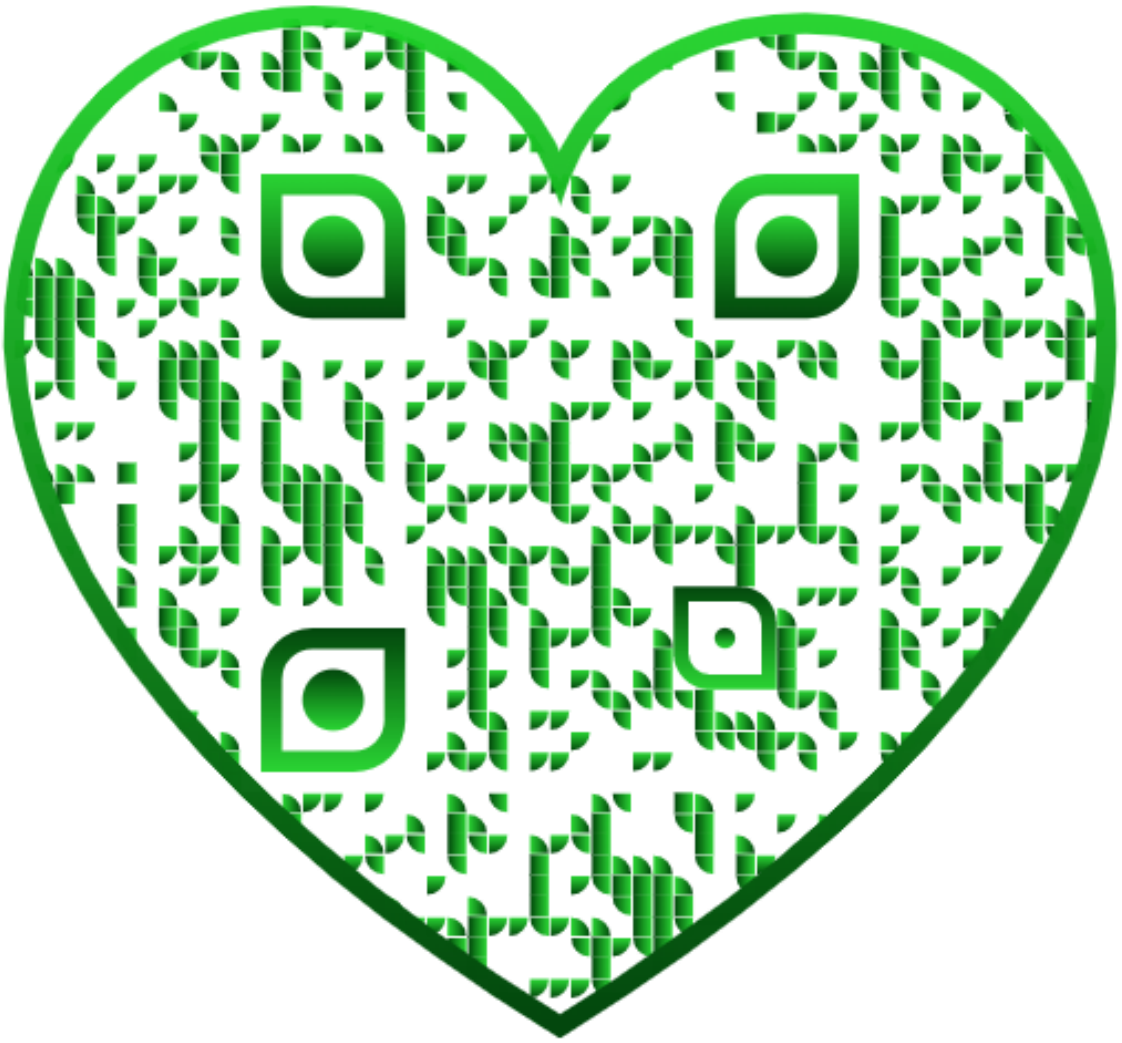
New Revised Edition

Paola Leopizzi Harris

UFOs:
How Does One Speak to A Ball of Light?

Preface by Dr. Michael Salla, Ph.D.

Foreword by Pascal Riolo



UFOs: How Does One Speak to A Ball of Light?

by Paola Leopizzi Harris
Preface by Dr. Michael Salla, Ph.D.
Foreword by Pascal Riolo

Table of Contents

1. Preface: Protocols for Future Contact
2. Foreword: Liaison Between Off-planet Cultures and Our Governments
3. Introduction: Back to the Future
4. Back to the Future: An Update

Section One: Back to the Past
5. The Man Who Started It All: Interview with Kim Arnold, Daughter of Kenneth Arnold
6. A Victory for UFO Disclosure: Interview with Clifford Stone
7. The Historic Stephenville UFO Sightings: Interview with Primary Witness Steve Allen

Section Two: Unconventional Wisdom from Unconventional People
8. Interview with the Honorable Paul Hellyer
9. The Death of the Fourth Estate: Interview with Dr. Steven Greer
10. The Bentwaters UFO Case: Testimony of Steven Robert LaPlume
11. The Hynek Method of Research: Laugh, Laugh, Study, Study
12. Dr. Hynek's Inquiry into the Bentwaters Case
13. Interview with Betsy McDonald, Wife of Dr. James McDonald
14. Interview with Colonel Philip Corso
15. The Perspective of Monsignor Corrado Balducci, Vatican Representative
16. Planetary Challenges in a Time of Change

Section Three: Challenges and Protocols for Future Contact – The Role of Galactic Diplomacy
17. The New Physics – Time Travel
18. The Philadelphia Experiment and Time Travel: Interview with Al Bielek
19. Protocol One: The Need to Study Exopolitics
20. Protocol Two: Our Stuff or Their Stuff? That is the Question.
21. Protocol Three: Visitors From the Future and Dimensional
22. Protocol Four: Viruses and Biological Contamination
23. Protocol Five: Communication with Alien Races
24. Protocol Six: Record, Collect and Decipher the Cosmic Messages
25. Protocol Seven: International Cooperation and Research Criteria
26. Protocol Eight: Orbs, Spheres and Intra-dimensional Beings
27. Protocol Nine: Galactic Diplomacy and CSETI Protocols
28. Possible Solutions
29. Epilogue: So, How *Do* We Speak to a Ball of Light?
30. Appendix: The Hawaii Declaration
31. Recommended Reading
32. About the Author

Preface: Protocols for Future Contact

Exopolitics is a revolutionary new approach to evidence concerning an extraterrestrial presence that is kept secret by a shadowy group of covert quasi-governmental organizations in the United States and other major countries. *Exopolitics* differs from more traditional approaches in Ufology, which focus on finding sufficient empirical evidence to indubitably prove the UFO phenomenon to be real. In contrast, *Exopolitics* focuses on the implications of the available evidence confirming the presence of extraterrestrial visitors to our planet. *Exopolitics* focuses on key policy questions such as: Are extraterrestrials friends or foes? Should space weapons be targeted towards extraterrestrial visitors? What diplomatic protocols should be used for establishing contact with extraterrestrials? Finally, *Exopolitics* focuses on identifying the key political players, institutions and processes influencing the available evidence of visitation by extraterrestrial civilizations.

The *exopolitical* challenge necessitates going beyond the simplistic demand for indubitable empirical evidence, and requires analysis both of how evidence is collected and analyzed and its implications. This typically leads to the realization that evidence is systematically distorted, removed or fabricated by shadowy quasi-governmental organizations intent on maintaining the "Cosmic Watergate." *Exopolitics*, therefore, requires an open mind and systematic attempts to investigate the best available evidence that extraterrestrials are visiting our planet, that quasi-government organizations are keeping this secret, and that the available evidence has important implications for all life on this planet. This book by Paola Harris, a veteran UFO investigative journalist, both

defines the *exopolitical* challenges before us, and outlines some strategies for meeting these challenges.

Paola began her UFO research under the expert guidance of Dr. Allen Hynek, who began advising her in the 1970s on the importance of thoroughly investigating UFO evidence. Working under Dr. Hynek, Paola began personally investigating key UFO cases by traveling to interview witnesses and see at first hand any available evidence. She has since compiled an impressive database of witnesses and evidence confirming the reality of the UFO phenomenon and of a high-level cover-up up by quasi-governmental organizations. Her research confirms that these shadowy organizations, in the United States, use their authority and executive orders passed by a number of presidents in order to co-opt the resources and personnel of various governmental, military and corporate entities.

In her first book, *Connecting the Dots* (Wild Flower Press, 2005), Paola provided an impressive compilation of interviews with whistleblowers and veteran UFO researchers, detailing how the UFO cover-up is organized and how suppression of the evidence occurs. Her book helped open up some of the key challenges confronting the emerging field of *Exopolitics*. In this book, Paola explicitly addresses a number of *exopolitical* challenges. As her book title suggests, these include establishing reliable forms of communication with advanced non-terrestrial life forms, establishing protocols for extraterrestrial contact and finally, understanding the covert quasi-governmental cover-up.

Paola's is the latest in a series of published books that explicitly examine *Exopolitics* and help define *Exopolitics* as a new field of scholarly study. My own book, *Exopolitics: Political Implications of the Extraterrestrial Presence* (Dandelion Books, 2004), describes the evolution of the global management

system for extraterrestrial affairs, outlines how *Exopolitics* impacts upon conventional international politics and gives an *exopolitical* analysis of the Iraq war. This was followed by Alfred Webre's *Exopolitics: Politics, Government, and Law in the Universe* (Filament Books, 2005) that examines how quarantine has been imposed upon the Earth due to historically violent human policies, and what this suggests about political processes existing in "universe society."

In the essays of her new book, Paola outlines the emerging field of *Exopolitics* and how it differs from more traditional UFO approaches. She advocates the need to break free of the myopic focus on finding indubitable empirical evidence and documentation and, instead, begin examining the implications of the available evidence, put forward by a number of credible witnesses and whistleblowers, that extraterrestrial visitation is very real. Paola correctly identifies that traditional UFO approaches are often a thinly-veiled form of debunking that systematically casts aside valuable testimonies from whistleblowers and witnesses courageously revealing the truth about extraterrestrial visitation. Having worked directly with key whistleblowers, such as the late Lt. Col. Philip Corso, she knew, all too well, the difficulty of substantiating the testimonies of those revealing the deep secrets hidden by quasi-governmental organizations behind the Cosmic Watergate. Her Essays section correctly lays out the need to study the implications of whistle-blower testimonies, and the folly in thinly-veiled debunking efforts that will doom traditional Ufology to irrelevancy as the population awakens to the truth of the extraterrestrial presence.

In the subsequent Unconventional Wisdom from Unconventional People section of her book, she interviews some of the key people contributing to the *exopolitical*

awakening. Most significant are the revelations from Dr. Steven Greer, former astronaut Dr. Edgar Mitchell, the Honorable Paul Hellyer and Ambassador John McDonnell, who all provide unique perspectives into the *exopolitical* challenges before us. Dr. Greer discusses how quasi-governmental organizations have usurped constitutional principles in maintaining the Cosmic Watergate. Dr. Mitchell reveals his own experiences, based on conversations with reliable 'insiders' that extraterrestrials are visiting Earth and government suppression of this information is very real. A former Canadian Defence Minister, Paul Hellyer, discusses the policy issues raised by US efforts to put weaponry into space and the possible targeting of extraterrestrial visitors. Former US Ambassador, John McDonnell, discusses his own current work with citizen diplomacy and how the visitation of extraterrestrial civilizations will impact on this.

The next section of Paola's book contains a number of interviews of individuals who point out the main *exopolitical* challenge before us in terms of developing the right protocols for extraterrestrial contact. The Charles Hall interview describes the need for developing the right protocols for interacting with extraterrestrial visitors. Hall warns that misunderstanding these protocols can have harmful consequences, as he directly experienced himself. This substantiates the need to carefully assess the development and use of advanced weaponry that might be used against extraterrestrial visitors. Another interview involves (Dr.) Dan Burisch, who describes the compartmentalized security processes used for managing human response to extraterrestrial contacts and for restricting this information. The interview with Philip Corso outlines the challenges for establishing a new world, based on human-extraterrestrial

contact.

Paola finally examines, in her last section of the book, some of the protocols that might be used for establishing contact with extraterrestrial civilizations. These protocols correctly point to one of the central challenges of *Exopolitics*: how do we communicate and act when in contact with advanced, non-terrestrial life forms? Each set of protocols point to a set of procedures that either have been used, or can be used when extraterrestrial contact occurs, in order to minimize undesirable actions and misunderstandings. Some protocols for encouraging peaceful extraterrestrial contact were agreed upon at the Extraterrestrial Civilizations and World Peace Conference in Hawaii in June, 2006. The Hawaii Declaration on Peaceful Relations with Extraterrestrial Civilizations was adopted by consensus at the conference, which comprised seventeen speakers and a total audience of almost 150. Speakers included the Honorable Paul Hellyer, Ambassador John McDonnell, Paola, Alfred Webre, Philip Corso, Jr. and I. The Declaration outlines seven key principles for promoting peaceful relations with extraterrestrial civilizations. It therefore represents an important citizen diplomacy initiative for establishing the protocols for contact with extraterrestrial civilizations. The Declaration is available in the Appendix.

Paola's book is a valuable tool for all those seeking to understand how to establish formal protocols for communicating and contacting extraterrestrial civilizations. Her book makes a significant contribution to the field of *Exopolitics* by correctly identifying the implications of the testimony provided by a number of credible witnesses and whistleblowers concerning the extraterrestrial presence. *Exopolitics* is an emerging field that promises to awaken many to the implications of an extraterrestrial presence that has yet

to be officially acknowledged to the general public, elected political officials or the mass media. Paola Harris' book makes a great contribution to awakening many to the implications of the extraterrestrial presence. I strongly recommend it as a valuable tool for both established researchers and those just beginning their journey in understanding the *exopolitical* challenges confronting humanity.

--Michael E. Salla, MA., Ph.D.
President and Founder Exopolitics Institute
17 November 2006

Foreword: Liaison Between Off-planet Cultures and Our Governments

It all started in October 2001, when I went to St Marino to give a talk on my abilities to foresee certain future events. I had been told that an important journalist, specialized in the paranormal, wanted to meet me. I had already heard of Paola Harris as an international investigative journalist in the Ufological field and, naturally, I was impatient to meet her. After my talk, Paola Harris came up to me and very politely asked me for an interview. I could never have refused her as I was so curious to find out more about her. Indeed, I was not mistaken as she was quite simply incredible. In that moment a strong, wonderful friendship was born which has enabled us to remain in touch despite our overburdened schedules and the distance between us.

Speaking about Paola Harris is not easy, since it would take a whole book to summarize her life and work. Rarely have I seen anyone so passionate about her various explorations, which take her to the four corners of the Earth. This passion of hers to seek the truth has led her to make exceptional discoveries and to meet "inaccessible" people, both in the United States and in Europe. Her encounters are often quite extraordinary: Edgar Mitchell (Apollo 14), John Mack, Uri Geller and Colonel Corso, to name but a few. Just by reading her first book, *Connecting the Dots,* you come to realize the kind of work she has achieved over the past years, always with the highest standard of professionalism. Paola has traveled a great deal and I can assure you that she has spent a huge part of her life in hotels, planes and conferences, so that she is always at the right place, at the right time to gather key information for her articles.

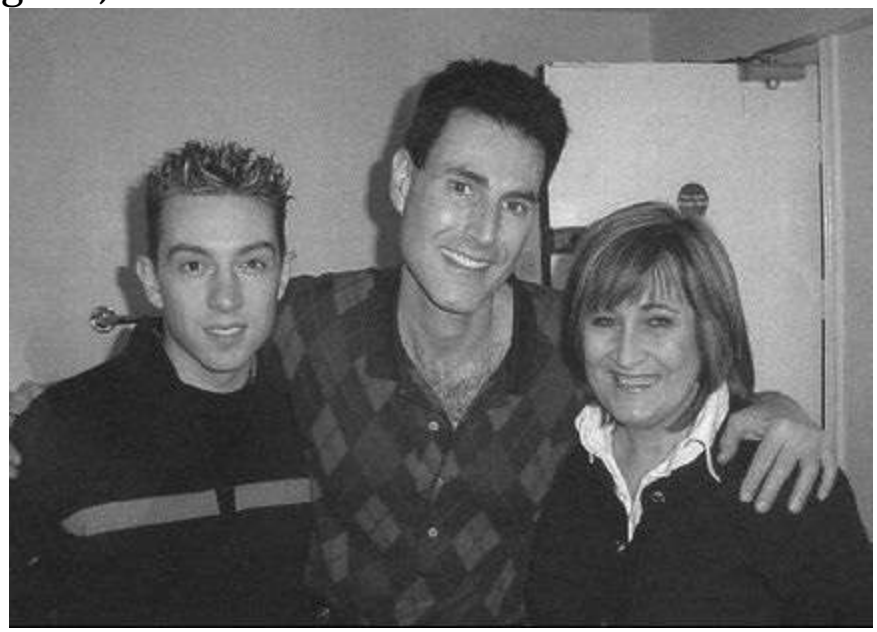
It is the same professionalism which captivates the attention of her public at these various conferences all over the world. Paola has managed to come to prominence in her field, giving her credibility in an area which is not always favorably looked upon in today's society. Despite her success through these various diverse passages to television, books and articles which have been published in major specialist magazines, she has always kept her feet on the ground. This is quite an astonishing journey for a woman who has remained true to herself in a world which is not necessarily very easy. The world of Ufology, of the search for extraterrestrial intelligence, is probably one of the most difficult areas of research in existence today. Why?

The answer is simple! Every question mark hides a truth. If this "truth" appears to be concealed, it is because it has a role and a sense in our system of life. All the observations we can carry out regarding unexplained phenomena always give us an inkling that hidden things seem to move us further away from life's authenticity, whether through lack of information or for fear of having to rewrite the history of the world.

What is interesting about Paola Harris is that, listening to her, we very quickly realize that we do not know everything about the extraterrestrial reality. Even if some of us remain skeptical about current knowledge of the subject, it cannot be denied that certain points leave us unquestionably astounded! Advances in our knowledge in the future are bound to enable us to understand many things which at present remain unresolved. I wish the reader of this book much pleasure in entering into this subject which is, so to speak, "disturbing and unsettling."

"Reason makes no sense until the Dream returns to reality."
––Pascal Riolo
Clairvoyant, Writer, International Speaker

Liège, Belgium, 12 November 2006 at 11.11 a.m.



Pictured: Pascal Riolo, Uri Geller and Paola Harris, Ireland.

Introduction: Back To the Future

Taking Ufology Out of the Dark Ages: The Emergence of Exopolitics and the Need for Our Species to Develop a Philosophy for Eventual Contact

For some time now, I have come to realize that we, researchers, may have remained static while the scenario around us is changing. We are still categorizing UFO sightings, which are now too numerous to mention, analyzing physical traces cases that have similar properties, and interviewing witnesses; dragging them before the media. One only needs to subscribe to George Filer's Files to see that, with the modern digital cameras, we are recording more than enough evidence of anomalous objects in the skies around the world to reach a verdict in any court of law. We are still doing the job. We are still doing the same thing, although everything around us is changing.

All this now presents us with an ethical challenge not to attribute to extraterrestrials what is terrestrial. This also presents us with a threat because, if we should ever be attacked, we would not be able to distinguish whose is the machinery, since it is virtually indistinguishable today. We need to be on our guard, not only for disinformation but also for "misidentification!" The entire scenario is becoming more apparent. But yet we do not have all the answers

Another element that has shifted is the entire abduction scenario. Before his death, Dr. John Mack, in his last lecture in 2003 in Florence, Italy, said that there seems to be a lot fewer abductions by small Grey beings. There is evidence that the alien agenda has changed and images, messages and

information are being directly downloaded to people. It appears that "whatever is out there" is going directly to the people. People are coming forth with prophecies, predictions and sometimes with new scientific information and mathematical formulas. Earthly science seems to be developing in quantum leaps to join with metaphysical principles and, generally, we seem to be amalgamating the information of centuries to try to understand who we are and from whence we came. This also signifies a major shift, which he called "a new *worldview*."

Pictured: "Imagination's Window." Art by Arial Ali.

The progression of this entire study, or what we researchers claim is a study of Ufology is undergoing a transformation which includes the emergence of many new, young theorists, many professionally-oriented researchers and some political activists. Some of these new faces include: Grant Cameron (Researcher on the Presidential Involvement), Richard Dolan (author of *UFOs and the National Security State*), Dr. Michael Salla (author of *Exopolitics*), Steven Bassett (X-Conference

organizer, political activist and lobbyist) and Ryan and Bob Wood (who sponsored the Crash Retrieval Conference and who release the Majestic Documents, majesticdocuments.com). This impetus has extended to college and university courses, which legitimize this research and are creating of it, a new social science.

Although I have been for the most part a *"field researcher,"* it is this academic element that now interests me most. There is a need to build a philosophy around contact, visitation and galactic interference in our affairs. Living in Italy for some thirteen years now and being infected by the Renaissance philosophical shift and Renaissance thinking,

I have only recently begun looking at this research in an exopolitical framework, thanks to the work of Dr. Michael Salla in his book, *Exopolitics*. Leave it to a college professor to shed some new light on what we "nuts and bolts" Ufologists have been doing for years, in my case as far back as the Dr. J. Allen Hynek years of the 1970s and 1980s! [Hynek was a professor of Astronomy at Northwestern University in Illinois.] Dr. Salla's book, *Exopolitics*, has us look at the true implications on our culture and society of this increased focus on UFOs for the last fifty years, since the "gift of Roswell!" Roswell was the turning point, as it became a race to hide the truth and create such a disinformation network that it has most of us chasing our tails. The Government is not at fault and yet we blame the mythical government, which has changed hands so many times since 1947 and which even misinforms its own presidents. We blame the military but not all the military is guilty of this massive cover-up. Some elements of the military have been trying to keep the technological and back-engineering operations under wraps but they probably do not understand the whole story themselves, or its real implications. The right hand often does

not know what the left hand is doing and the "information handlers" have all been replaced over the years.

Pictured left to right: Robert Wood, Dr. Michael Salla, contactee Eufemio del Buono, Maurizio Baiata in Rome, 2005. Photo by Paola Harris.

I recently began looking at this paradigm shift in another light, since it seems that contact has changed and the agenda seems to be shifting directly to the people. There is much evidence with the witness testimony that is now emerging and with the presentation of Steven Greer's Disclosure Project and the X-Conference, both in Washington D.C. Some interesting doors seem to be opening. It is now 2012 and more than fifty years after the Holloman Eisenhower Accord. The questions are: Will there be a shift in consciousness, in philosophy, and will people be tired of this planetary control though fear, terrorism or other "false-flag" operations? Will the military be tired of keeping secrets that, in the end, is not in its best interest of the protection of freedom? All these questions are pertinent today to what is an Earth-bound civilization of human beings who are watching one tragic *Earth change* after another happen, some of them consequences of their own raping of the environment.

Turning the Corner!

Lately, I have noticed a real hunger and eagerness to know the truth and a real cooperation to share information and facilitate disclosure, which is replacing the territoriality of the researchers of the past. Maybe the time has come to get on with it!

The Charles Hall case, which I cover in this book, is a major quantum leap in disclosure and expert witness testimony. It opened many doors to cooperation among different types of researchers. It began with my research of the case in July 2003, together with airline pilot, David Coote, and a LAPD-retired policeman. This research has been enhanced by the contributions of researchers all over the world who, like me, are trying to figuratively digest the fact that alien civilizations have been hosted on Earth, as early as 1965, in a cooperative technology exchange. If one is to believe ex-Air Force weather observer, Charles Hall, and the story is so rich in details that there is little reason to disbelieve him, we have had entire families of these so-called star visitors on the planet for some part of our history. Of course, Clifford Stone told me this years ago––but who is he but someone who actually was involved in crash retrievals!

The fact that people like Charles Hall, Clifford Stone, Colonel Philip Corso, Clark McClelland and other credible military witnesses are being allowed to talk makes me think that the agenda has changed and disclosure is close.

Pictured: The first X-Conference in Washington, D.C. Photo by Paola Harris, 2005.

Exobiology and Exopolitics

Will our reaction as a species be "shoot first and ask questions later," as the Wernher von Braun prediction begins to unveil itself? I would be quite hesitant to begin a war with a super-galactic force. Former Canadian Minister of Defence Paul Hellyer agrees. All we know now is that we are being "watched!"

If the new *alien agenda* is to go directly to the people, then how will the people act or, better yet, react? (One is a carefully planned policy the other is an unprepared and often violent reaction based on *fear*.) That is why it is so important that we weigh the *exopolitical* implications of this inevitable contact through examining the actual facts and testimony and past political policy.

I remember when Carl Sagan helped create the fascinating scientific field of *Exobiology* and he talked to us, on the *NOVA* programs, about the possibilities of extraterrestrial life. It was clear he knew more but logically he needed to present it in stages. It began a process of acceptance of possibilities; slow steps towards revealing the truth. As hypothetical as it was then, in the 1970s, it has become more real in this millennium with the exploration of our many interplanetary probes. Therefore, it is logical that the creation of Exobiology goes hand-in-hand with the creation of *Exopolitics*, as we, on this planet, will need to study the implications but, even more, the

protocols for contact! Thanks to the pioneering work of Dr. Michael Salla and others, we can begin to plan and decide "as a species" what we are to do. We should create a philosophy but, even more importantly, a protocol and political strategy that will not be based on fear but on mutual respect. Former Canadian Minister of Defence, Paul Hellyer mentioned this when I interviewed him in Toronto in February, 2005.

This will become more important than measuring the radiation level of the soil sample or the radar positioning of the object in our skies. Ironically, the UFOs being examined could be our back-engineered technology. It is time to determine our individual positions and our own individual philosophy of contact and then look at our collective role as a species.

In the end, we need to work out a philosophy of study that can be incorporated in our academia to educate our future generations so they do not re-invent the wheel but maybe re-interpret it. Also, to eliminate this regime of *fear*, we may need to return to a more naive time where we acted out of respect; to bring back the enthusiasm of the 1950s days of space exploration and, Sagan-like, wide-eyed wonderment of the Universe. With a philosophy in place, the protocols must come next. Ex-airman Charles Hall, when confronted with the physical presence of the Tall Whites, needed to decide whether to stand or run, whether to speak or shoot, whether he was sane or insane and whether he was acting as an individual or part of some established program. This is all protocol and any future contact will present us with these future dilemmas.

This needs to be discussed now. Those in the know needs to brief the planet on the agreements made and they need to come clean with our real history.

The emerging leaders in *Exopolitics* need to continue to step forward and help facilitate this new social science.

Someone needs to discuss this now. Someone needs to brief the planet on the agreements made. Someone needs to come clean with our real history and someone needs to help us promote a new social science in our universities called *Exopolitics*.

Carl Sagan is gone but he has left us with his legacy in the film *Contact*. Maybe we need to believe Jody Foster when she lost time-travel minutes and maybe we need to believe Charles Hall in his Indian Springs experience of co-existence with extraterrestrials: beings like us who have children.

So the questions are: Who is in charge today? What are we to expect from our own UFO copycat technology? Where are the Aliens? Where are the crashes? Why are more credible witnesses being allowed to talk and who is now running the show? I will continue to address these questions in this book but, most of all, I will continue to emphasize a need for a new academic discipline to address the challenges we face in the likelihood of imminent contact. I will work at reviewing protocols that have been used in past contact and analyze whether we, as a species, need to devise new ones. This was my goal in writing this, my second book, to present new information in the form of interviews with credible people to help stimulate critical thinking.

Yes! After all this time we are still *connecting the dots*.

––Paola Harris
Rome, Italy, 2005

Back To The Future: An Update

"Just because something is unknown does not necessarily mean it needs to be feared. Some say the future is predetermined; others say we can change the probabilities and alter the future. I think the future is determined by the characters of those who shape it. We are those characters. We can shape our future. All we have to do is take action. Trust yourself and the rest will unfold as it is meant to. We can envision/imagine all we want, but unless we act. our future won't change that." ––Mel Fabregas

Pictured: April, 1997, International UFO Conference, Acapulco. Dr. J. Allen Hynek, Ray Stanford and James Hurtak addressing the future generation.

These wise words from *Veritas* radio host Mel Fabregas echo my thoughts about the exciting year of 2012. Just as I am revising and revamping this book, I believe it is time to take re-evaluate, our lives, our direction and our focus. It is the *end of the old world thinking* and possible start of the new one; one filled with possibilities based on an enlightened vision,

compassion and love. The collapse of our institutions, economic, educational and restructuring of our spiritual thinking will encompass a more *global worldview* that may be all -inclusive. The key, as Mel Fabregas tells us, is to "take action." We can see from the movements *like Occupy Wall Street* and other social protests that people are feeling more empowered. We are re-evaluating our scientific materialistic attitudes, a term Dr. John Mack often used.

It leaves a space for the *"knowing of the heart or intuitive knowing."* I imagine that *"speaking to a ball of light"* or communicating with disembodied intelligences in general will incorporate this type of skill. We would be able to understand all cultures, all languages , all ethnicities by using "direct thought transfer." We need to develop this skill.

This may appeal to our *off-world neighbors* and perhaps open the doors for communication and real galactic diplomacy. We shall see. All I know is that it is an exciting time to be alive.

I have added some new interviews to this revised version of my original book, none perhaps so important as that of Kim Arnold, third youngest daughter of Kenneth Arnold. She has consented to come forth and put the past in perspective. Kenneth Arnold was *the man who started it all in 1947*. Being that he was a pilot and credible witness, he realized his sighting opened the door to the validation of this phenomenon, which he refers to as a fact. Its significance for the planet is far greater than we can ever realize. All this has made me realize how far disclosure has progressed. Yes! We have disclosure with the words of these first hand witnesses, these unmistakable players who have contributed much to the body of knowledge in the field. Disclosure will not come as a formal announcement from any major government, including the president of the United States. They have too much to loose, and they, like us

researchers do not have the answers. They cannot micro-manage this phenomena although many intelligence agencies believe they can.

Pictured: Exopolitics Summit, Barcelona, Spain, 2009.

We know there is a small "managing group "who deal primarily with the media, even the social media and they release small bits of information to see the public reaction. This top-secret group, much like the MJ-12 group are accountable to no one and have their own private agenda and operate internationally across the board. In essence, no one can control the ETS, when they appear, whom they choose to contact and how they fly in and out of our air space; not even NASA can do it. They have their hands tied.

It is interesting to note that I have returned to the term *Ufology* instead of *Exopolitics* which I used in the original book title because of the contamination surrounding this area done by ego-driven writers who do not research anything but use this new term for tabloid journalism and profit. They do it by inciting excitement, fear and confusion in the readers. I feel that

the conspiracy theory theme which is now prevalent under *exopolitical* banner is non beneficial, is dangerous and distracts the general public from the true purpose of *Exopolitics* which should be education which brings some type of enlightenment. I have become very disillusioned by it all and this type of *Exopolitics* has given this discipline a bad name and added much disinformation to valid research. Europe, on the other hand, has maintained a high standard for its exopolitical network . I saw this when I attended the May 2011 Portugal meeting of European groups organized by Francisco Correa *(Exopolitics Portugal).* They are successful in reaching social media outlets by their meticulous and verifiable research. They have a different ethic and a less commercial approach and I herald them as pioneers for the future. They are the group of young people who supported at the 2009 Barcelona Summit *(Time for Truth 2009).*

In a sense, it is a step back for me, but the fact that I am still discussing protocols for contact and galactic diplomacy means the focus is still on the future. In essence, since there is no time in the *quantum continuum*, then we must view it as past flowing into present. It is all learning. It is all part of the process or journey, if you will, and it is all *good*.

––Paola Harris

Boulder, Colorado, 2012

Section One
Back to the Past

"It is my impression that everyone, no matter what part they play in this existence that seems to go on into infinity, has a special purpose or a special task or a special reason for being what they are and for doing things they do." ––From *The Coming of the Saucers* by Kenneth Arnold and Raymond Palmer

The Man Who Started It All: Interview with Kim Arnold, Daughter of Kenneth Arnold

We all know that June 24, 1947 was an important date in the history of this discipline we now call Ufology, the study of UFOs. It is obvious from Kenneth Arnold's own words and those of his third youngest of four daughters, Kim Arnold, that Arnold had a sense of destiny about his sighting of nine disks traveling at over one thousand miles an hour in an echelon formation between Mount Rainer and Mount Adams in Washington State. Being a pilot and a credible witness, Arnold is however most famous for coining the term "flying Saucer", a word that has inserted itself in our working vocabulary of the study of unidentified flying objects in general. His description of the objects to newsmen in Pendleton, Oregon in 1947 was that "they flew like a saucer would if you skipped it across water." Somehow, he believed in this destiny, that he was in the right place at the right time.

This event wreaked havoc on his life and that of his entire family while it peaked his personal interest in UFOs in general. He was requested to send in a full report of his experience to the commanding officer of Wright-Patterson Field, which he happily did. He also offered publically to submit himself freely

to a physical and mental examination by the military. He had a health certificate which qualified him to fly as a commercial pilot. Initially, Kenneth Arnold cooperated fully with the press, the intelligence community and investigators because he was a sincere and honest man, a man who was personally curious about what this all represented. From this interview with his daughter, we can see that sadly he was disillusioned as well as harassed for the remainder of his life.

It is interesting to note that during his second sighting on the way to Tacoma, Washington on July 29, 1947, Arnold was able to film a cluster of twenty to twenty five brass colored objects that looked like ducks, coming at his plane at terrific speeds.His filming attempt was less than successful as only one or two objects appeared on the film. Like so many witnesses, he sought validation for the anomaly he had seen, at times thinking that it may have been exotic foreign technology from another country or "guided missiles," robotically controlled. He watched the news wires very closely from June 28th to July 3rd as there appeared to be a flying saucer flap over the entire country. Ironically in that time period, we all know that there was the newspaper release of a crashed saucer recovered by the military in Roswell, New Mexico in July 1947.

In his book *The Coming of the Saucers,* Arnold talks about another sighting near Boise, Idaho by United Airlines, Captain E.J. Smith, highly respected, veteran pilot who had this sighting verified by the entire crew of his DC-3 on July 4,1947. The Smith sighting was of nine disks flying in loose formation, taking off in tremendous speeds, Ironically, both Kenneth Arnold and Captain Smith became investigators of the mysterious, illusive Maury Island incident that included the disappearance of the chief witnesses and the deaths of two intelligence officers. This would be enough to scare anyone

away from investigating flying saucers. In the end, Arnold would say "Flying saucers are not a joke."

Arnold's grounded, no nonsense, investigative nature caught the interest of the Intelligence community with whom he cooperated initially especially with the tragic Maury Island, Washington State incident. The report included a malfunctioning disk, which spewed forth what appeared to be two different substances a material described as thick white newspaper-like metal that floated down to the bay; and a black metal like substance. My colleague, astronomer J. Allen Hynek would later describe this type of encounter as that of the second kind; a physical traces case. Because of the bizarre circumstances, no such materials were recovered successfully although Arnold and Smith saw them. There is strong evidence that in those days, these witness were discredited or eliminated, but the secret had to be kept secret. As Kenneth Arnold says in the introduction to his and Palmer's book, "This thing is big. It is something to which we most certainly ought to have an answer." It was his conviction that the facts already at hand must not be buried beneath a mass of official stupidity and a smokescreen of idiocies. He believed it was "time for truth" because it was the most important fact of our time, and he stressed the word fact.

The historical perspective is what now interests me most as a UFO investigator, especially when I realized that Disclosure with a capital "D" may not be imminent in our lifetime. It was from a *Coast to Coast AM Radio* interview I did that Kenneth Arnold's granddaughter, Shanelle Marie Schanz, called in to speak to me. She consequently introduced me to her mother, Kim Arnold. Kim, a grandmother of two granddaughters, is the third daughter of Kenneth and Doris Arnold's four daughters. It is obvious from this interview that she had a special

relationship with her dad. She was at first hesitant to come forth due to the conflict and stress that this subject matter caused in the Arnold household. I was happy that she finally consented to do this debut interview.

In essence, it reflects her own individual feelings about her father and the subject of UFOs. Kim has much to say and her perspective is so important to the historical archive of serious researchers today.

Interview with Kim Arnold
Daughter of Kenneth Arnold
Boulder, Colorado
November 7, 2011

"Well, I'd like to bring closure to my father's sighting on June 24, 1947 and I just feel in my heart that I was the child born to do this. I just had to go through everything. And I had to read everything. I was on a spiritual mission. I had to try to figure out for myself why all this had happened to our family. Why was it my father that was chosen to bring this awareness of 'Other Worlds' into human consciousness?"

Paola: Your name is Kim Arnold. You are the third daughter of Kenneth Arnold.

Kim: Yes, I am 57 years old now.

Paola: Are you the youngest child or are you the second youngest child?

Kim: I am the second to the youngest child. I am their third daughter.

Paola: Oh, you're the third. So are there two younger than you?

Kim: I have one younger sister and I have two older sisters.

Paola: Have you thought about speaking to the public for a while and sharing your thoughts?

Kim: You know, to be honest with you, I've always felt it was my human destiny to talk with people, you know, about how my mother and father felt about their experience. About his experience, my father becoming famous and known as "The Man Who Started It All," about his flying saucer––UFO experiences, and maybe sharing with everybody my parents' views. Their views about their conclusions as to what they believed the UFOs were––their theory at the end of their human lives.

Paola: Was it important to you when you were in your 20s or 30s? In your early years, did you think about it then?

Kim: Did I think about it then?

Paola: Did you read UFO magazines?

Kim: No, I did not. I was overwhelmed with being married, trying to get through the struggles of everyday life, marriage and raising two little children. I have two adult children, now, a son and a daughter and with the everyday struggles of life…I did not have time to even think about it.

Paola: Well, that's perfect. Because you're very honest and your motives are pure. Because there is a timing in one's life when one wants to speak about these things. So in 2012, do you think it's time to talk about it?

Kim: Well, I'd like to bring some kind of closure to it and I just feel in my heart that maybe I was the child chosen to do this. Because it has really been perplexing to me––the mystery of it all. So, I began a spiritual journey seeking the answers––you know, it must have been in 1994––seriously. I think it was clear

back then that I decided to get out all the files and my father's old tapes and just start going through them. And my mother, you know, was going to throw all the UFO stuff away. If I hadn't lived close to her, she would have really just tossed it all away.

Paola: Was your mother alive in 1994?

Kim: No, no. My mother died…actually my mother died on the 45th anniversary date of the bombing of Nagasaki, Japan. She died on August 9, 1990.

Paola: So in 1994 all at once you…

Kim: Just a minute. I'm trying to figure it out. It was four years after my mother died. Yes, it was the year 1994, that is correct.

Paola: Okay. So what did you think about doing? Did you think about writing a book, about talking?

Kim: No, at that time I just had to go through everything. And I had to read everything. I was driven to find something–– anything that would help me understand why this had happened. Why my father had been chosen to bring this awareness into human consciousness, the reality of "Other Worlds." Because it was so difficult, you know. It made both my mother's and my father's lives extremely difficult, it really did. It affected their daughter's lives in a very powerful way.

Paola: Well, when you were in your childhood and growing up in that family with your other sisters, when do you remember the UFO/flying saucer's being an issue? Was it when you were a little girl or when you were a teenager? When do you remember your dad talking about it?

Pictured: Kenneth Arnold and daughter Kim, courtesy Kim Arnold.

Kim: It was always an issue. It seemed like my dad was always upset about it. It was like we lived in the shadow of the "saucers." Really, it was like a shadow had been cast over our entire family. It would be another journalist calling my father out of the middle of the blue. It would be somebody calling him from London, England, wanting him to do something. It would be an article on UFOs he would read in the newspaper. And I guess the biggest problem was that it seemed like everyone that my dad got involved with regarding his sighting of the flying saucers…that he never had the money to hire a professional attorney to protect him. That was his biggest problem that he got involved with people where nothing ever seemed to turn out the way that he wanted it to. So he felt very

discouraged and very, very sad. It just seemed like everyone he got involved with made him very angry or sad. I guess it would be fair to say my father was a very sensitive man and carried his heart on his sleeve. Yet, he also was a man of great strength and integrity. A man's man, you would say. A man that other men admired and looked up to.

Paola: Do you think he thought people were taking advantage of him?

Kim: Oh, yes, of course. In fact, he kind of called it being "exploited." He felt that he had been exploited in many ways, due to the fact that he was a famous man. Yes, he did. Absolutely. And the sad part of it was that most people didn't even really listen to what he had to say. They just got, you know, into his life, got most of the information they thought was important and ran off and just did whatever they wanted to do with it. He wasn't represented as truthfully and as honestly in a way that he felt proud of.

Paola: Okay, Kim, this is our chance to represent him. What did your dad think about his first sighting?

Kim: Well, his first sighting on June 24, 1947. Okay. What did he think about it? Well, it is a fact. He saw nine unusual objects travelling at tremendous speed, and he was in a perfect position to clock their speed, and you know, he was very much a realist about this because he was a pilot. And you know; pilots have to be very aware of what is in the air at all times, because their life depends on their ability to make sound decisions. And the light that lit up the cockpit of his airplane was bright, so bright that he compared it to the brightness of a welder's arc light. This brightness startled and frightened him. He looked around to see where this light had come from. He thought, at

first, perhaps it was the sun's reflection off another airplane close by. When the second flash happened he could see in the distance where the flash had come from. He saw these very bright objects travelling very close to the mountaintops in the Cascade mountain range near Mount Rainier, and he thought they might be a formation of jets…he rolled down his window of his airplane to make sure he could see clearly what he was seeing…he was very confused about what he was seeing. He just could not see any tails on them like ordinary aircraft.

Paola: What kind of airplane was he flying that he rolled his window down in?

Kim: He had a CallAir A-2 plane. They were made in Afton, Wyoming. Yes. CallAir. They were especially designed small airplanes designed to fly at higher altitudes.

Paola: Okay. But you had told me once that he was looking for something else that day. He was on his way somewhere.

Kim: On December 10, 1946, there had been a plane crash. A C-46 Marine transport plane carrying thirty-two marines was believed to have crashed into Mount Rainier. There was a $5000 reward for anybody who found its location. So that crash happened on December 10, 1946, in the dead of winter. This was June 24, 1947 so he was up there hoping to find the crash site and collect the reward.

Paola: Well, that's really interesting. And the thing is that he instead had this famous sighting. What's the first thing he did? Did he come down and report it? Did he talk to the family about it?

Kim: Well, yes. He came down and he started talking. He flew directly to Yakima, landed and went into see Al Baxter, the general manager of Central Aircraft. Mr. Baxter called in some

other pilots into the room to listen to my father's story. Then my father took off for Pendleton, Oregon and when he got there a group of people were there to greet him. News of his strange sighting had travelled––FAST!

Paola: Basically, then what happened? Did people become interested in his sighting? How did the phrase "flying saucers" come about?

Kim: Well, because he described to a newspaper reporter how erratically they flew and they flew like a saucer would if you skipped it across water. And then the newspaper reporter just kind of came up with this term "flying saucers." But actually the UFOs weren't completely round like a saucer at all. They weren't round like that. No, they weren't. But that's how they got the name flying saucers from the way my father described them to the newspaper reporter as to how they flew.

Paola: Okay. Did anyone try to talk him out of it? Did somebody come and try to talk him out of his sighting?

Kim: No. Nobody tried to talk him out of what he saw. Everyone just wondered what he had really seen.

Paola: But I mean, did they say, "What you saw wasn't real," or did they ask him if he thought "the saucers" were from another planet?

Kim: Well, no. No one really knew what they were at first. Everyone was still in a state of paranoia, because of the atomic bombs that had been dropped on Hiroshima and Nagasaki to end the war. It had only been something like twenty-three months since the bombs had been dropped on Japan. My father was riding the fear and paranoia like everyone else. He was in fear that these strange craft might be guided missiles, robotically controlled…maybe from Russia. That they might be

carrying nuclear weapons. That was his biggest fear; nuclear weapons, because they were traveling so fast. Their speed frightened him. He figured the combination with the speed of this craft combined with nuclear weapons could destroy our nation. So he actually stood up and said what he saw because he was in fear for the safety of our nation. I do not believe anyone, at first, even considered these strange craft were from another planet. My father believed what he had seen were very real and physical. Remember, he rolled down the window of his airplane just to prove to himself what he was seeing.

Paola: So he was a patriot, really. He looked at it as a matter of national defense, so that's what he did.

Kim: He viewed his sighting of this strange craft as a very serious subject. He believed it was a matter of importance for our national security.

Pictured: Ken Arnold, courtesy Kim Arnold.

Paola: Okay, later in his life did he become obsessed by it? Did

he read books about it? Did he talk to people about it?

Kim: Oh, not at all. He was so perplexed and so overwhelmed with so much publicity over the UFO or flying saucer subject for so many years that he became a recluse, and he stepped away from the whole UFO circus, you might say. He talked about it as a ridiculous circus. He didn't want to be part of it because he really believed that what had happened to him was important and it was a spiritual experience; that it had happened to him for some type of divine purpose. He truly believed that this was a very serious subject that should be studied in a scientific manner. He was very perplexed and confused about everybody's concept of aliens visiting from other planets––that type of thing. He didn't really feel like that is what they were at all. Not the ones he had seen. After many years of reflecting about what he had truly seen, he believed they were alive, rather than anything made out of nuts and bolts.

Paola: So let's just describe what your dad felt they were. What did your dad feel they were and where did he think they came from?

Kim: Well, you need to know what both my parents believed; their personal theories.

Paola: Both your parents, yes. We haven't talked about your mom yet. What did your dad think?

Kim: Well, actually my dad believed that they were possibly from the world where we go when we die. That's what he believed. He was only brave enough to tell this to a newspaper reporter two years before he died in 1982, that he felt the flying saucers were the link between the living and the dead. It took him his entire lifetime to "let the cat out of the bag" you

might say, and be brave enough to state it the way he really believed.

Paola: He believed that they were really inter-dimensional, or hyper-dimensional?

Kim: No. He believed in the concept that possibly the flying saucers or UFOs were just one of the ways we traveled when we weren't in a physical body. Possibly there were many ways to travel in "other worlds" or "other dimensions," just like we have many different ways of traveling here on the physical plane where we now exist.

Paola: So did he think there were human beings inside then?

Kim: Well, you know when you die, Paola, no one takes their physical bodies with them when they die. All of us leave our physical bodies here. And your remains just naturally become part of the earth. So what you take with you, I think, is your body of light, or your soul body, which, I believe is really who we are; indestructible beings of light energy. My father explained to me his philosophy of what we were in a very simple interesting way. I remember that I was 17 years old when he told me this concept. I was at my parents' home and we were out in the kitchen…he began, "You know, Kimmie Buttons (I know it is funny, but he called me Kimmie Buttons, it was my nickname as a little girl), opening up the refrigerator… taking out an ice cube tray…here's an ice cube tray. You see all these ice cubes?" And I said, "Yes." I didn't know what he was going to tell me, and he continued, "See this one ice cube? I believe that when you are alive in human form you are in a solid form, like this ice cube. When we die, or leave our human body we just change form (like the ice cube when it melts) but retain our true identity." What he said to me I will never forget.

I knew that this theory of his was due to his sighting of the flying saucers. I just understood this.

Paola: Well, that's really interesting. Now there's a book written about him and I think it's with Ray Palmer. What was that all about?

Kim: Oh, *The Coming of the Saucers.*

Paola: Yes.

Kim: Well, to be honest with you, it is a very poorly written book published in 1952. As a little girl I couldn't even finish reading it…it was so boring. The first half of the book my father wrote and that was interesting…but the second half that Ray Palmer wrote was boring…boring…. My father turned down an offer from Doubleday Book Publishing of $50,000 in the late 40s. I believe it must have been because their contract was simply too complex and overwhelming….and I do not know for sure, but I think that Doubleday had a clause in their contract where they had the right to fictionalize his story…to make it more marketable. My father felt compelled to keep his story accurate for history. My father had this thing believing in science and history. He felt they were important subjects. He also felt that this experience had happened to him for a divine purpose. $50,000 was a lot of money to turn down clear back in the late 40s. If he had accepted their offer, it would have made a great impact on his life and the lives of his family members. He was getting a lot of mail. It is said 10,000 letters from people all over the world. Somehow in all this confusion, he read a letter from a man named Ray Palmer. In 1947, Mr. Palmer was the editor at Ziff-Davis Publishing Company in Chicago, Illinois. My father was taken by the sincerity of Ray Palmer's letters and they became long distant friends. My best guess is that my

father felt comfortable with Ray Palmer, he simply liked Mr. Palmer's personality on paper. So, as it went, Ray Palmer and my father decided to do a book together. So that's kind of how the book came about.

Paola: Yes, well, were you around when he was writing this book?

Kim: No, I wasn't even born. I was born in 1954, seven years after my father's historical sighting.

Paola: So he wrote the book before you were born. So you knew there was a book your father was involved in.

Kim: Well, you know, my father had a secret stash of his books floating around the house…you know. Dad autographed and gave most of them away. It upset my mother––she had to hide books from him so his own daughters would each have one…he autographed one to me and he autographed one to my other sisters, thanks to our mother hiding them from dad.

Paola: Did he like the book? Was he satisfied with it?

Kim: I don't think that he thought it was the best…but what mattered to him was that his own words were printed exactly, and he was proud of that. Obviously, it never was a best seller… and it was never financially successful. It was just kind of…it just wasn't written very well, written in a very interesting manner like Doubleday would have written it, but that is the only book in existence at this point that has been done about his sighting.

Paola: Your father, he had conclusions about what the UFO phenomenon was, but was he interested in sightings, or in cases, or in alien landings? Do you remember him in his later years ever being just totally convinced?

Kim: Yes, in the beginning, he went through a phase of interviewing other people who had interesting experiences. He bought a reel to reel tape recorder and flew off in his airplane and interviewed people and recorded their experiences. These people just came into his life because they knew they could talk to Kenneth Arnold. He was a safe person. They believed that he would understand them, so they contacted him. You know, he and my mother had interesting people just knocking on their front door. I saw this happening even many years after he had become famous. People would seek him out. He believed people really did have some very interesting stories, and for the most part, they seemed to be very sane and truthful about their experiences. Actually, historically he was the first "Ufologist."

Paola: Well, see, this is really interesting. I didn't know this about him. So he started recording and researching. It was also a spiritual journey.

Kim: Yes. He was actually the first Ufologist. At least he was out there doing it on his own. Because they were interesting stories and he started kind of thinking, some of these stories might be true. In other words, what had happened to him…strange things happen to other people too. So why would he give other people the benefit of the doubt that they didn't have real experiences too.

Paola: Did your father ever meet Dr. J. Allen Hynek?

Kim: I believe my father met Dr. Hynek at the First International UFO Congress held at Chicago's Pick-Congress Hotel from June 24 through June 26 in 1977. It was at this UFO Congress in 1977, I believe this is correct. Dr. Hynek was a speaker at this conference along with my father.

Paola: Okay.

Kim: Yes, that was the last major conference that my dad was a keynote speaker at. It was in 1977.

Paola: Do you have any materials or tapes from that conference?

Kim: Yes, I do.

Paola: Well, it would be perfect to hear what he has to say because he's no longer with us, and you're kind of a spokesperson for him.

Kim: I have the book, record and all the tapes in my father's files.

Paola: Well, that might be interesting for you just to go over that, to hear what he has to say himself, because I'm curious, too. So, your dad had certain ideas and you said he was very disillusioned and he became a recluse. Do you mean like he didn't really want to speak to the general public during the last part of his life?

Kim: Yes, he was just tired and worn out from all of it. He had repeated the same story over and over again. So many times he simply got tired of doing it. It always seemed to interrupt his life and his ability to focus on making a living for his family. So, he just got to the point where he didn't want to do it anymore.

Paola: Okay. Well, let's talk about what all this did to your family. I mean, this is a family. Do you remember your mother and her thoughts on it? You said your mom was a medium, she was very sensitive.

Kim: Well, I wouldn't say that she was a medium. I mean, she had abilities of mental telepathy and that kind of perplexed the family, too, that she had this ability of mental telepathy. And I did personal research on my mother's side of the family.

I tried to research everything and I found out that when my mother was a little girl, my grandmother would have all her little girls practice mental telepathy when they were baking in their kitchen in Weiser, Idaho. I never met my grandmother on my mother's side. She died when my oldest sister was just a baby, years before I was born. Anyway, I heard through the grapevine that my grandmother used to encourage her children, her daughters, to practice mental telepathy in the kitchen when they were cooking. She would have one of them try to think of a song and she'd have the other girls try and guess the song, and they could do it. So apparently my grandmother knew this unique ability ran in her family line…to be psychic and sensitive ––being telepathic was a natural ability.

Paola: Well, that's very interesting. Do you think you have some of those abilities, too?

Kim: You know, I'll be honest with you. At first I didn't believe in it, sincerely. And I remember my mom telling me about one particular incident when I was going with my first boyfriend, Daniel, when I was just 16 years old. I was in the car with her one day when we were backing out of his driveway and she said to me…"You know, Kimmie, the reason you're going with Daniel is because you were married to him in a previous lifetime and he drowned." And I looked at her and I thought, "Well, that's interesting, mom (but I really did not understand the importance of what she was telling me at this time in my life)." I just thought what she had said to me was interesting and I did believe that my mother had some unique abilities, but I did not really understand them. But I was pretty young then. I loved my mother dearly, and I really did not understand her unique abilities or ideas and where they came from, or if they

were really real. I did not understand that this was really possible to remember past lifetimes, for her to know these strange things. But, as I got older, I went through a stage where I had some interesting experiences remembering past lifetimes. You know, many people do have these recalls during their lifetimes. Now, because I have had these types of experiences, myself now. I understand that my mother's experiences about remembering past lifetimes and having this ability were very real and valid experiences. Now I truly believe my mother was a very advanced soul and passed this special telepathic ability to me. Obviously, it was passed down from generation to generation. From my personal viewpoint, reincarnation is the truth and we do come back in human form for experience. I believe it is simply called "the travels of the soul".

Paola: Well, that's really interesting because your mom is a multidimensional person. She's interested in so many things. Tell me, how did she react to the UFO experience and the fact that everybody wanted to talk to your dad? How did she react to the whole field?

Kim: Well, the whole house was just chaotic. It was simply nuts. I mean, they received 10,000 letters from people all over the world. My dad became world-famous overnight. My mother got tired of packing the 10,000 letters from home to home when they moved. I do not know when she threw out all the old letters, but she did at one point trash them. She just couldn't handle it. A lot of the letters were people talking about the "End of the World" because of the reality of atomic bombs. A preacher publicly stated that my father was "A prophet and messenger for the end of the world" You know, people were saying all kinds of strange things about my father. So actually the hubbub, journalists calling them night and day––their

telephone ringing off the hook…it just went on for days, weeks like that. So, no, to be honest with you, it deeply upset their normal family life, very much so. My dad was only thirty-two years old at this time and my mother was only twenty-nine when this happened to them. They had two small children, two daughters ages 4 and 2 1/2 years old. They were very young parents trying to deal with a crazy and strange situation at a young age.

Paola: Oh, I see. And did they wish it would go away?

Kim: I am sure they did. But, it was simply impossible. My father took a stance that he was honest and stood strong for what he believed was the truth. He saw what he saw and stood by the truth of his story until his human death.

Paola: But you know, when you're describing this it almost seems like destiny. Like it couldn't go away because your parents were part of a divine plan. Does that sound realistic to you?

Kim: Well, if you really look back on it now, as part of history. The fact that my dad reported the flying saucers––you can clearly look at it. First of all, I do not believe that what he saw were evil or negative. I just do not believe that because really, what it did…my dad's sighting…you understand now that it opened up the windows of our human minds to believing in the real possibilities of other dimensions or "Other Worlds." So it was a brand-new concept for our world to digest. Because my father had the courage to stand up and tell the truth he literally changed human thinking in a very positive way. And I believe wholeheartedly, that his sighting was part of a plan by our Divine Creator to introduce this new concept…I mean, there's no doubt in my mind that it was. Everyone should be able to

see that now…so many years later. It now has been sixty four years since his sighting of the flying saucers.

Paola: Well, that's what it seems like, that it was a divine plan. But, it did turn your family life upside down. Your sisters, your family, your father and mother. Do you remember any particular discussions any of you had over this turmoil? After you were born and you were part of this family, that it was part of your everyday life?

Kim: You know, earlier you asked if my father had met Dr. Allen Hynek. I remember, Paola, you said you once worked for him many years ago. The fact remains that the government was dead set on debunking UFO sightings, as we all well know. The fact remains that the government was even trying to discredit pilots who reported seeing such things. It was simply ridiculous. Because my father knew as a professional pilot that these things were real and a lot of reputable pilots really saw these things, and it wasn't right that these (my dad would say) the powers to be were saying negative things about pilots reporting flying saucers. My father would rant and rave around the house expounding how could these idiots say these things about respectable pilots? Pilots were responsible and respectable men. People's lives depend on their ability to do their job. And, he simply lost it when Dr. Hynek said flying saucers or UFOs were some kind of "swamp gas." I listened to my father's angry ranting and raving about Dr. Hynek's ridiculous theory of swamp gas for hours. I was pretty young then, but as we all know, Dr. Hynek quit working for the government and became a realist and sensible investigator on the subject.

Paola: Well, you know, you're absolutely right. He wasn't the only one. There were a lot of people who were angry with

Hynek because Hynek was hired to debunk but then he changed his mind, and he did work in his own group in the Center for UFO Studies in Evanston, Illinois. And he was also responsible for consulting on the film *Close Encounters of the Third Kind* with Spielberg, so I think he kind of saved himself there at the end. So I understand where your dad was coming from and he was absolutely right because he knew what he saw.

Kim: Well, now you've brought up *Close Encounters of the Third Kind*. And that's okay because I've read all your books, and I thought, you always brought up *Close Encounters of the Third Kind,* and that was another big discussion at our house. My father just absolutely could not believe how they just created that movie and they didn't even contact him, ask what had happened to him or anything. My mother and father talked about it quite openly that neither one of them could believe no one really cared about the real story of what really happened and how it really did begin. It really began on June 24, 1947 with my father's sighting.

Paola: Well, that's interesting to hear. So he thought he should have been asked to be a consultant on the movie, because he saw what he saw?

Kim: Yes. Of course he saw what he saw. He never made any major money on his experience of seeing flying saucers. He actually referred to himself as the unfortunate goat that happened to report the things. He never in his wildest imagination could have ever believed that they would be something that could not be explained in a physical sense. He had no idea of what he had really gotten himself into.

Paola: I mean because he saw something, he thought he should

have been asked about his personal experience to help with the details in the movie?

Kim: He was confused about not being consulted. After all, the movie depicted in a way, the actor, Richard Dreyfus having the same type of experience as my father did. In some respects the movie mirrored a little bit of the hysteria in our house. I mean, it did. You know it wasn't our real family story. It did not reflect all the things that really happened to my father or our family. He did have an airbrush drawing done of the flying saucer to document what he had seen. He did go out and buy a movie camera and was certain if he ever saw anything again, he was going to get it documented on camera––to prove to everyone that these things did exist…and he had someone create a hanging mobile made with hand carved wooden flying saucers that hung in his office in the basement of our home at 7717 Ustick Road in the 1960s.

Paola: A mobile.

Kim: A mobile, yes. I don't know who carved the wooden flying saucers, but they were cool looking, painted in silver and blue. I don't know who he had make this mobile, but now that I remember it, it was kind of cool looking. The flying saucer mobile. I had forgotten about it.

Paola: It was part of your life. I mean, it was part of your everyday life. So, in other words, if you had to say something to vindicate your dad in a way, if you wanted to make a statement about Kenneth Arnold, what would you tell the general public?

Kim: What would I tell the general public? He was a common man who struggled with basic everyday problems of making a living, providing food, shelter and clothing for his family. He was born, lived, and died like any other human being. He was a

survivor, a man of integrity, of great courage and conviction. A strong-willed man who had principles and morals. A man's man, people looked up to him and admired him. He died a natural death like any one else––struggling with the fear and fact that he was going to die from cancer.

Paola: Very logical. And something extraordinary happened to him that changed his worldview.

Kim: Well, completely. My parents were very intellectual and fascinating people. They were advanced thinkers because of my father's sighting of flying saucers. They were unique people, you know. They talked about interesting things and it was a privilege to have had them as my parents. I hold the memories of them in the center of my sacred heart. I will always love them dearly and miss them for the rest of my life. I miss the most their interesting conversations.

Paola: Okay. So they passed some of this down to you. It's not an accident that we connected and it's not an accident that it's coming time to talk about this. So, just a general idea that "we are not alone." How does that affect you in your life? Is it something you think about, that you wish a proper documentary could be made?

Kim: Okay. This is how I feel about it. My dad got involved with a television company from London, England years ago and they did some kind of a documentary film, a Nova series or something, and he was extremely discouraged about how he was represented, how they edited and finalized the product. I guess my hope would be that I would find a professional where we could collaborate on a good product so that it would be something my father would be proud of. Something that would represent him in the proper light and be historically accurate,

but it would be the proper way to preserve his memory. Yes, but I don't feel like just selling his legacy for money, just money just letting it go without a higher purpose. Because my father dedicated his entire life to preserving this story, making sure it was correct and accurate, and I feel out of dedication and honor to his memory that it needs to be done properly. I want to be a part of that, I want to be in the editing room, knowing that what is being finalized is done to honor his role in human history.

Paola: That's perfect. I agree. Do you think it's a matter of timing? Do you think that maybe the time is right for this?

Kim: I don't know for sure that the timing is right. I do know that, basically, I am 57 years-old and really, something very positive and productive needs to be done with my father's legacy to mankind using all his historical materials.

Paola: Okay. You have home movies and you have clippings. Do you have writings that your father did…you know, where he scribbled down ideas and so forth? For instance there were nine UFOs, weren't there?

Kim: Yes, there were nine. I have what is left of my father's files and archives. I was the executor of my parents' estate.

Paola: Because he would have had to count them.

Kim: Yes, there were nine. And actually as they flew in flight, they didn't all look the same at all. Sometimes they looked like circles, sometimes they looked like lines. They were very intriguing in their flight patterns. It was the second to the last one that came up to him and that's the one that's so famous, that particular flying saucer or UFO is the one he had an airbrush drawing made of. It was the second from the last in the formation of nine. He saw the first four and then the next five followed.

Paola: The second to the last came up to him and did he have a reaction or any kind of message or any kind of psychic connection with it?

Kim: No, not that I am aware of. But, I do believe that it is possible that the brilliant white light pulsating from the center of their surfaces…that's another very interesting thing. They pulsated with blue-white light from the center of their surfaces similar to the rhythm and beating of our own human hearts. So there you have it. That is why my father believed they were alive, absolutely. It was this reality that the pulsating light from the center of their surfaces was similar to the beating of our human hearts.

Paola: That is so interesting. I've never heard that before.

Kim: No, that's one of the hidden secrets I've got over here in all the files. Yes.

Paola: That's interesting.

Kim: Similar to the beating of our own human hearts.

Paola: So he thought they were alive.

Kim: Of course he did. Absolutely. 110%. Yes. They were not mechanical in any sense at all. And the other thing that was intriguing about him is that he saw flying saucers, he told a journalist, at least eight times in his life. I do not think all his sightings were documented, but it is interesting that he said that he saw them eight times. Some of them they've tracked down here and there. But the most important sighting was his first sighting and then his eighth sighting, and in his eighth sighting, two of the flying saucers went under his airplane and one was as solid as a Chevrolet car and the other one he could see through the center of it. This convinced him that they had

the ability to change their density. He described it once trying to justify this unique ability––like jelly fish in the oceans. How they can look so solid then turn so invisible. So, if you really want to know how I feel about this or how I think about this, is that the flying saucers he saw on June 24, 1947, it was a staged performance. Because they were acting like they were traversing close to the tops of the Cascade Mountains, they gave my father the impression that they were solid and physical. But, I think the reality was that they could have changed their density and gone right through the mountains. I believe the flying saucers were on some type of mission, to introduce this new concept into humanity by putting on this spectacular show for my father.

Paola: That's really interesting. I didn't realize he had eight sightings. What's the date of that, do you know?

Kim: In an interview he did in 1981, he said this sighting was in 1952 near Susanville, California.

Paola: Did he report the eighth sighting, too?

Kim: No, I do not believe so. I think that he just told it to journalists.

Paola: So, it was his eighth sighting that gave him this concept about density?

Kim: He started thinking about it. It was kind of like it was just a big performance. It is definitely food for thought.

Paola: And that they were performing?

Kim: They could have changed their density. It is my own theory. I believe they were putting on a show just for Kenneth Arnold, so he could tell everybody, that oh, yes, they're real and physical. But, they had a secret. They could really change their

density and become completely invisible; they were from another dimension.

Paola: Well, I hope that you can find some of the other sightings your father had. I hope he documented these, too.

Kim: There's one more sighting I know of right now. It is in his book, *The Coming of the Saucers*. That particular sighting was on July 29, 1947 when my father was flying over the La Grande Valley. He saw about twenty to twenty-five, brass-colored objects that flew in a cluster like blackbirds, that wheeled on edge, flipping as they flew. I do not believe this was a very long sighting in the number of minutes, but very short. He still was amazed that he saw these, too.

Paola: Did he ever take any pictures?

Kim: Oh, you know what. I think in all the stuff, there was one time he believed that he got some on film. He sent it off to Military Intelligence and they cut it out, sent it back to him and said there was nothing there. He was really upset about this.

Paola: Well, let's end with this question: was he ever threatened? Was he afraid? Was he nervous? Was he told not to talk?

Kim: Yes, that's why I haven't talked before now because my mother told me the "secret scary story" when I was just a young girl. She said that my dad thought after he had his sighting of the flying saucers that he felt he should be a public speaker on the subject––educating people about the truth. He believed he had had this experience for a reason. He was scheduled to speak for the Knife and Fork Club on its lecture circuit at $100 a day. He even printed up his own booklet, The Flying Saucer As I Saw It, which he planned to use as a program guide for his speech. Anyway, a letter arrived from the Knife

and Fork Club withdrawing their offer to him. The family secret begins here. I do not know who it was…I have forgotten. But, my mother said this man came out to their house shortly after this letter. He drove my father out into the Boise desert to visit with him privately and secretly. He told my father that his brother worked for the government and that he had seen the government eliminate its own men. He told my father that these government men were serious and dangerous people and he should not go against their demand that he not talk about the flying saucers. He was not to continue to do speeches on this subject and he had better take this seriously. My parents both considered this a threat on their both their lives. And, of course my mother and my dad, truly I think, felt threatened for the rest of their lives. So, I guess that would be one of the reasons he became kind of a recluse and refused to go anywhere and talk about it or anything. I even have a letter in my files written in my mother's own handwriting stating her fear that if they went to a UFO convention in Mexico, their plane might be shot down and both of them killed. Now, looking back on this letter, my mother never did get over being threatened by the government. I really never got over her telling me this scary story. If it wasn't for you, Paola, and making me realize that it was a number of years ago… I have finally been able to put this into the proper perspective. All the government men who threatened our family years ago are simply gone. Buried and dead. This kind of fear has a way of never going away.

Paola: Okay, well you know, you've told us quite a bit that I didn't even know about your dad's other sightings and of your life. But, okay, to finish up this interview, again, if you had to say something to the general public; if you, Kim Arnold, after all these years have an opportunity to talk, to represent your dad

and your mom and your family, what would it be? What would you say to the young people of the world? How do you really feel about this?

Kim: Well, I really do believe that we are living in a very dangerous world. I believe that it is highly possible that hydrogen bombs could possibly be used in the future of humanity. And actually what I would like to say to everybody is the fact that I believe that at the time of human death that what we do is simply change form and retain our true identity. I believe, like my parents, that human death is not really the end, but that it is a fact that we actually live on into "Other Worlds." And, like my parents believed, I think that these worlds are multidimensional, and much more spectacular than anything we've ever believed humanly possible. It really isn't that boring and there are all kinds of activities going on, similar to the world where we now live.

Paola: So you think that we live in a multi-inhabited universe?

Kim: Oh, of course, absolutely. But, it's not just about being in physical form for the short time that we inhabit these temporary bodies because, it is a fact: we discard these bodies like old coats. Whether we die from cancer, plane crashes or old age, or die in time of wars, we actually move on and live in dimensions of other worlds. And yes, it's simply a new beginning and a never-ending story.

Paola: So the UFO phenomenon, for you, is part of this normal mystery or this paranormal mystery?

Kim: Yes, and I think that my father is linked in human destiny in a very powerful way to Robert Oppenheimer, because Robert Oppenheimer was known as the father of the atomic bomb and my dad is known as the father of the modern era of

UFOs, and I believe that they are linked in a time frame of destiny to offset each other. That it will not be the end if these weapons are ever used, but part of a spiritual plan by our Creator to spiral us into higher dimensions of etheric worlds created by our Divine Creator.

Pictured: Kim Arnold and Kenneth Arnold, courtesy Kim Arnold.

Paola: Well, thank you, Kim, because what you've done is give a message of hope and that's something that I think the world needs right now.

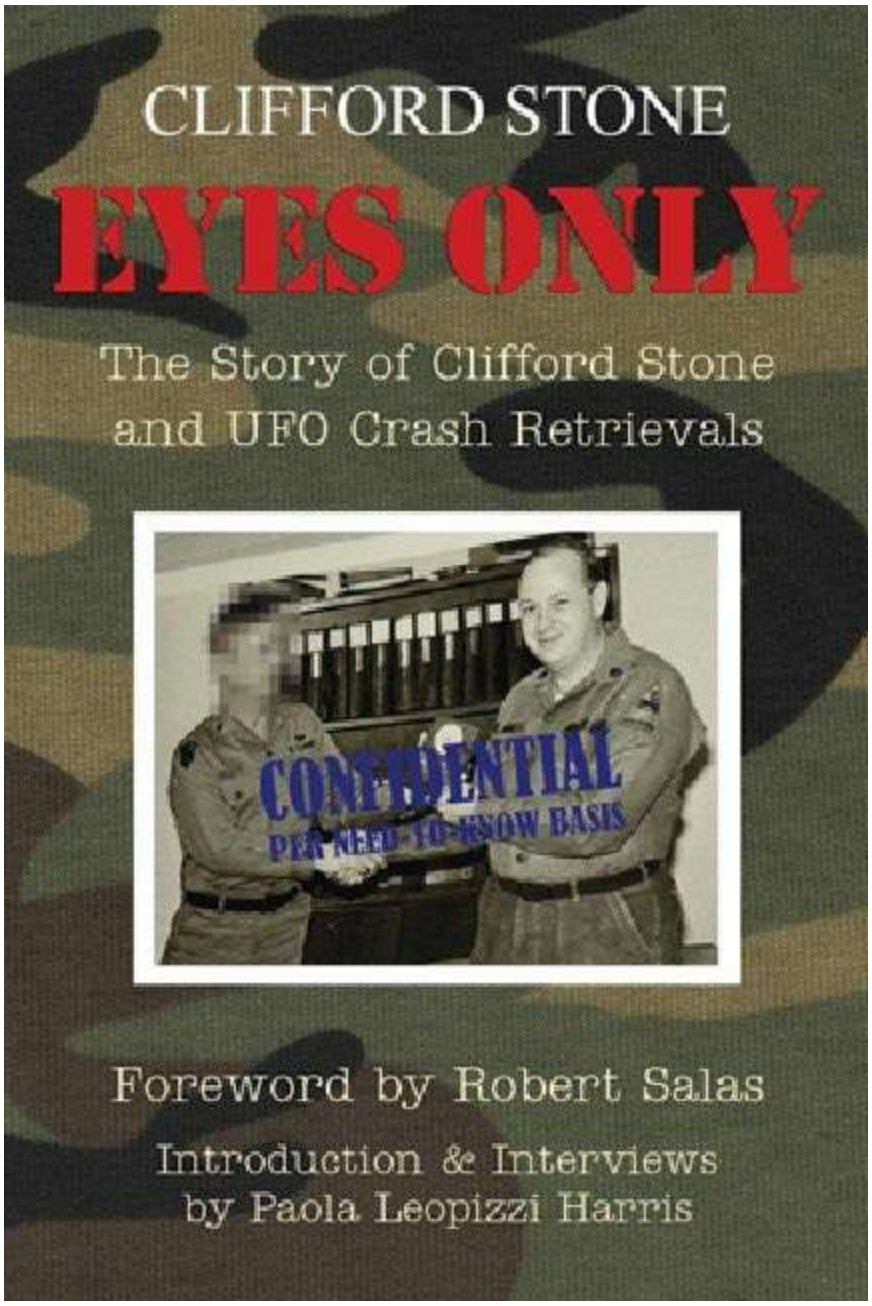
Kim: Well, Paola, I don't mean to sound like the bearer of bad news, but the truth of the matter is we are living in a very physical world and it is a fact that these weapons exist. Albert Einstein said in a newspaper article I found in all my father's clippings (he glued onto big scraps of yellow construction paper)––it was dated April 24, 1950––Mr. Einstein said that an atomic war was inevitable unless a world government was established immediately and that this kind of war could wipe out two thirds of the people on earth. I read this and thought, Really? What?

I was shocked, and the truth of the matter is, all of us common

people just do not have a clue as to what our governments have been doing. We are all just too busy trying to make a living to pay our bills and support our families. Governments just look at us common people like we are numbers and vital statistics they store in some computer file.

A Victory for UFO Disclosure: Interview with Clifford Stone

The year 2011 was a pivotal one for me because I realized a dream: that of sponsoring the Clifford Stone biography. During a trip to Roswell with a close friend and researcher Tom Hamlin, we were able to obtain documents to support Sgt. Clifford Stone's claim that he was an essential player in crash retrieval. The book, *Eyes Only: The Story of Clifford Stone and UFO Crash Retrievals* is excellent and quite compelling. It belongs in the library of every serious researcher.



Excerpt from *Eyes Only: The Story of Clifford Stone and UFO Crash Retrievals*
Interview by Paola Harris
Roswell, New Mexico
October 2, 2011

CS (Clifford Stone)

PH (Paola Harris)

CS: During my army career, I was often classified as being TD, on temporary duty

PH: What is temporary duty?

CS: You cannot exceed temporary duty more than 179 days. In Moondust, every six months, new orders were issued, called "hip pocket orders," because you'd have a copy right there. Anyone and everyone would provide you with anything you needed to get that job done. Hip pocket orders were issued to people who were involved in Projects Moondust and Blue Fly.

PH: Like you.

CS: Yes. Also NEST, Nuclear Emergency Response Teams.

PH: So this Fort Lee document shows that you were doing something during this fourteen-day period?

CS: No, it shows that I was doing something for the year and month that I was there and that I was not at Fort McCallum, Alabama for a year. I went to Fort McCallum while I was stationed at Fort Lee, Virginia, on temporary duty for three weeks to take the Non-Commissioned Officer course.

PH: This other stuff happened in that year, from December 1968 to January 1970? Do you have anything other than that one document that proves you were there?

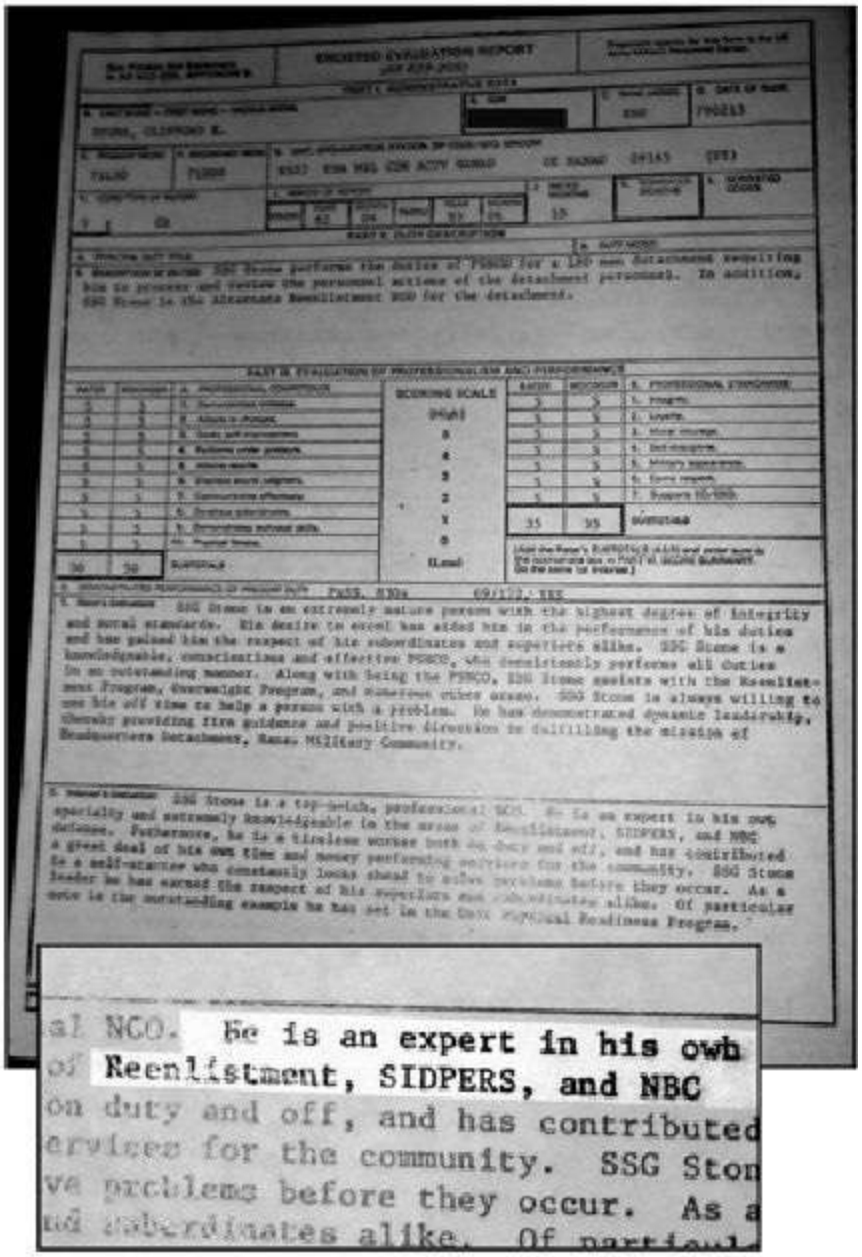
CS: They gave me a diploma, but that was lost years ago. My parents split up, and a lot was lost when they sold the home.

PH: What would be the alien interface cleanup, or crash retrieval cleanup, be called?

CS: Nuclear Biological and Chemical warfare (NBC unit), same as for mundane cleanup. You don't reinvent the wheel.

PH: Are biological and nuclear substances involved?

CS: They could be. Some of the craft use anti-matter for their engines, but some use things that we can't even understand. There's total annihilation of energy, and as a result, there is residual background radiation that can be picked up on a Geiger counter. Thirty to forty-five minutes later, it's no longer being picked up. If they have mechanical problems and their nuclear collider causes a reaction with the anti-matter, if it messes up you may have dirty debris, which isn't highly radioactive but could cause cellular disruption and could be hazardous.


al NCO. He is an expert in his owh
of Reenlistment, SIDPERS, and NBC
on duty and off, and has contributed
ervices for the community. SSG Ston
ve problems before they occur. As a
nd subordinates alike. Of particul

Pictured: The document stating that Clifford Stone was trained and is an expert in Nuclear Biological and Chemical warfare (NBC unit) cleanup.

PH: Did you ever see angel hair or burnt fiber optics?

CS: Yes, it was like a massive spider cobweb only not sticky. It was pure white, and I've held it in my hand––although not for too long because it will disperse.

PH: Was it in the damaged part of the craft?

CS: We saw it in the open. Sometimes, if a craft was having mechanical problems, there might be a fall of this substance.

PH: There was a sighting of angel hair over a soccer stadium in Italy, and it was analyzed and found to contain glass and sand. The soccer team stopped and watched the UFO.

CS: If you remember to put it into a tube, it will eventually turn into a gas. If you taste it, it will make you sick, but there's no taste. It looks like cotton candy, though it's not sticky. We had people in 1989 who were seeing the entities, they were ten feet tall––

PH: Where were you?

CS: In Germany, but the Soviet Union was having reports of ten-foot tall people. They had hundreds of people who saw these, and the entities would float over fences. The whole situation is that no one had ever heard anything like this. In September 1952, did you ever hear of the Flatwoods West Virginia monster? This was the same thing. Also, some of the reports were very reminiscent of the Mothman, which was also similar to the Flatwoods Monster. And there were people who did get sick as a result of being sprayed by something by these creatures, even in the Soviet Union.

PH: Did you read these reports, or were these talked about?

CS: I actually got to go to the Soviet Union. There was a 501 Intelligence battalion that was there, and we worked with the Soviet Union on that.

PH: Did you have any opportunity to talk to the Soviets about this?

CS: Yes, one lady there whom I'll call Kathy. She was probably abducted as a kid but she always referred to it as a dream. I

asked her whether it really happened and she said she felt more comfortable calling it a dream. When it came time for me to go home, she asked me whether she should tell them what had happened to her in her life. I said, no, if you tell them, a lot of bad things will happen that you don't want. I don't think you're really ready to go through what happens to a person that they think they can utilize.

PH: But there's some coincidence that she was working in Intelligence.

CS: It's because she had the smarts to do the job, and she happened to be assigned to me as my interpreter. It wasn't because they had recognized anything special about her or any latent specialty she might have, which was a good thing because she wouldn't be an interpreter. Her mission was to interpret from Russian what was being said and to translate my words into Russian.

PH: Is Global Horizon a program like Moondust or Blue Fly?

CS: Moondust and Blue Fly are just words.

PH: These are vocabulary words for what? Are they programs?

CS: Yes, we have Project Moondust which is the project to recover objects This program differentiates whether it is of terrestrial origin, of foreign origin, or extraterrestrial origin. Round Robin means the spacecraft of another earthly foreign power. Global Horizon has to do with something that did not originate on planet Earth but is artificial and survived impact onto planet Earth.

PH: You were there, you did this, yet you have to go back and prove what you were doing, you have to find the documentation.

CS: You know, Andy Rooney had a saying, People will accept the facts, but only if the facts fit in with what they already believe. People have been involved in UFO situations, maybe only one time, but it affects you for the rest of your life. No one's a believer until they have an experience. Most people who do, it will go to the back of their subconscious and will only be brought up when someone asks about UFOs. Most of us, it doesn't have a real dramatic effect on our lives. But someone who has an incident of high strangeness, it affects the rest of their life. And there are tens of thousands of people now in this situation. It affects how they interact with their friends, their families, and their co-workers. The intent in getting this stuff out is so they can say, "This is what happened to me, and I'm not alone." Sometimes it's just an interesting story, but it can also help others who are going down that path.

PH: I tell people that you are a guy who is not into ego, you are interested in helping other people who have been go-betweens between humans and aliens. You want to help them understand what their lives are like because of what you are like. You're connected with humanity, otherwise you wouldn't give a darn. There was a story you told me about a bomber coming down in Viet Nam, but I didn't realize all the people on the bomber were dead.

CS: It wasn't because of an ET destroying it, but I do think ETs had something to do with setting it down.

PH: There wasn't anything wrong with the bomber, right?

CS: It had damage that would be consistent with the attempts by anti-aircraft crews to bring it down, with missiles that they were not supposed to have. Now again, there were a lot of things that we knew about that we didn't tell the American

public, to ensure that the war didn't escalate. The Russians and the Red Chinese were helping the Vietnamese at that time, with very sophisticated air defense systems which allowed them to bring down some of our aircraft.

PH: The first time you went over there, were you fighting as a regular soldier or did you know they were going to use you in this way?

CS: The first time, I didn't even know I was in Viet Nam.

PH: Where did you think you were?

CS: They didn't tell us. We got on a plane, we got off, they didn't tell us anything. We had to give up our dog tags. There was supposed to be no American involvement. We were not to be identified. If something happened there, you weren't there. When we went there, we knew there was something strange about the aircraft. There were certain people there who had to do certain things with it, and we were going to extract it. It should have been in a hundred thousand pieces when it crashed, but it was like a giant hand just set it down. It was cut into three pieces and the wings were cut off. They used those giant cranes, weird-looking helicopters that could move a lot of cargo. They had a boxcar underneath them, and they could move that boxcar and just have the crane connected with it. That's what they used to remove that aircraft, because they wanted to go over that aircraft with a fine-toothed comb.

PH: So this was a strange aircraft that the US government wanted to study.

CS: It wasn't a strange aircraft, it was a B-52, but it was strange that it went down in so few pieces. The damage that was done was like a small missile.

PH: So you were part of the group that went to investigate that in 1969, and they made you take off all your chevrons and everything, right?

CS: Yes.

PH: They didn't tell you ahead of time where you were going?

CS: No, they didn't tell us.

PH: Did you leave from Germany?

CS: No, we left from the United States. They told us we were going to Florida on a training exercise. One guy, who got off the aircraft when we refueled -- this was normal procedure for a training exercise, though this time we were told to stay on the aircraft -- this one guy got off and looked around and said, "If this isn't Oakland, I'll kiss your hindside." At which point the Colonel pulled out his .45 and said, "The next person that opens their mouth will become a non-issue because I will not hesitate to shoot. You will be briefed when we are airborne again."

PH: Is this the same colonel you met when you were nineteen?

CS: Yes.

PH: So this colonel took you under his wing when you were nineteen until you did whatever was your last job, and he was in charge, you believe, of the ET reality?

CS: He was one of the top people. He was always there, and I think he was assigned directly to me.

PH: When did you see him for the first time?

CS: In 1969, I was eighteen or nineteen years old. In 1968, I went in to Fort Jackson, South Carolina and I was exposed to all the pictures and everything. I knew there was Top Secret, but I didn't know it was all this.

PH: Was it Cosmic Top Secret?

CS: Cosmic is the highest, SDI is Sensitive Department Information. It was to ensure that only people with a strict need-to-know would ever see these documents and photographs.

PH: Photos of what?

CS: Craft, and entities.

PH: That must have blown your mind, seeing photos of entities.

CS: But I didn't really know what I was seeing, whether they were real, whether it was a test… I did know for a fact that I wasn't supposed to see it, because I knew I didn't have the proper clearance.

PH: Just a quick question before we go back to Viet Nam, When was the last time you saw this colonel?

CS: Probably a couple years after I got out of the military.

PH: Did you year from him before or after Robert died?

CS: I got a call from him when my son died. There was a big concern then, and a big cover up concerning the death of my son. But I believe that was more to do with trying to protect the woman who hit my son, and she told the truth about it, but they had to bring in a crisis management team because they thought there were a lot of people who would need assistance. The person who was head of the motor vehicle department at that time said the car was right there and there were two pickup trucks. I was the first of any kind of law enforcement there on the scene.

PH: The pickup trucks were suspect?

CS: They stopped the car.

PH: Do you think it was programmed?

CS: No, I think the woman actually accidentally hit my son. But, when I went to tell my wife what had happened, the police officers stated that an APB had been put out and they were looking for a small blue pickup truck with three young males in it. At that time the story was getting out that somebody had taken a stick with a nail in it and had put it through the spokes to make the motorcycle crash, but that is completely untrue. I know for a fact that in Viet Nam you would have politally-sanctioned assassinations. One of the ways you would do that, because a lot of people drove motorcycles over there, was to put a stick inside the spokes when you stop at a red light. When the light changes and people start driving off. The tires rotate and it pushes it in, then breaks. If there's a nail in there, it penetrates the tire and the bike will go down. If you've ever seen pictures of traffic in Viet Nam, it's bumper to bumper and a rider will get hit many times before most people even know the bike went down. That's what I imagined happening here, but it didn't happen.

Pictured: Paola Harris interviews Clifford Stone at the Conscious Life Expo, Los Angeles, California.

PH: When you guys got off the plane, after being warned by the colonel not to talk, you were all quiet?

CS: After we fueled up and took off, they gave us the information about going on the recovery of a US aircraft that had gone down in a country that was not friendly to the US. A lot of us were wondering what we were needed for, but they indicated that this was a special aircraft. One person asked what was so special, and was told that we'd find out when we got there. They said because of the sensitivity of the mission, everybody had to take every personal item out of our pockets and put them all in plastic bags, the size of a sandwich bag. We labeled them with our names and our ranks, and the bags stayed on the aircraft. It was a commercial aircraft, not military, and we were supposed to return on that same aircraft.

PH: Are we talking about the army, or the air force, or a rogue group?

CS: As far as I know, those three folks that were there were not part of the army, navy, air force, but were part of the small nucleus that controlled this.

PH: When you got off, what did you see? How did the entities come to you?

CS: We landed at an airbase, and it was all dark. I saw bonfires, and everything else was pitch black. We began to bank for landing, and I saw the landing lights. When we landed it was obvious that we were in an Asian country, but we didn't know which. There was a chopper waiting for us, and we boarded and took off. Another helicopter took off with us. There was a little camp where we were supposed to stay until we finished

the job. We walked about five miles from the helicopter landing to reach the craft, and by that time it was beginning to get light. I saw the craft, and it was the first time I had seen a B-52 up close, and I had always thought they were bigger. I walked around the craft, and when I reached the back, some of these grey entities came.

PH: These aren't the guys you described once…

CS: Like the Pillsbury doughboy, with spindly arms and legs. About 3-4 feet high. I had my M-16 slung down, and they came out and said my name. They pronounced it like "Clif-for-ard." They asked what I was doing there, saying I was not supposed to be there.

PH: What did you do?

CS: I freaked out. I called out, "VC!" We had no way of knowing where we were, though later I found out we were in Cambodia, and I started shooting. I wanted them to be Viet Cong. The bullets had no effect. They followed us about a quarter of a mile to a stream, where the Colonel had tents set up. There were people there who had never seen Americans before, who spoke no English.

PH: Did you see the entities again?

CS: No. They kept saying I wasn't supposed to be there. The government wanted me in the military, working with UFOs. The ETs knew this would happen.

PH: Do you feel that these ETs were hostile?

CS: No.

PH: What do you think they were doing there?

CS: I think they were concerned and checking to see what we were doing. They don't have a concept of war, and they can't

understand why, if we are rational and intelligent beings, we would do this. They have always been here, and have always had interaction with humans. Today, that interaction is very dangerous and must be kept to a very limited scale.

PH: Because they're concerned that humans will do what you did, take out their rifles and start shooting.

CS: We will absolutely do that. It's the human reaction. We react violently and hostile against the unknown. I had had contact before, but in the circumstances that I was in––why was I calling out " VC"? That was the only point of reference that I had.

PH: Do you think they brought that plane down?

CS: I think they had it set down so they could survey the damage. They had already seen World War II, but now we were doing things differently. Remember, most B-52s were carrying nuclear weapons at that time.

PH: Tell me about the cave you saw, that the inside was transparent.

CS: That was one of the more significant incidents. When we were inside, we could see out, and we'd laugh because you could see them dig in and it was just like air. That was after I had already gotten to Viet Nam, and we were going into this cave ––we saw our people outside, like a search & destroy team. That was also controlled most of the time by the NSA. One side of the cave was like a big screen and we could see them walking. It was strange, but it was plausible to us. We thought it was Communist technology. There were rumors that the Communists were planning to use bubonic plague as a weapon against us, and we thought maybe this was what we were looking for. Less than a hundred feet into the cave we had

a radio that couldn't even get static. We had a runner from there, so we could still communicate. We got to this one big opening where they had caverns that had been dug out in preparation for a long, protracted war. But we saw the entities there.

PH: Describe the ones you saw there. You said they were like frogs?

CS: The color is hard to describe. It was like a greyish brown. They looked more aquatic, and their eyes and mouths reminded me of frogs. They had two little slits for a nose. The skin was rough, and they had strange fingers with sort of suction-cup things, but I can't really be too clear on this. People want descriptions, but it was hard to notice everything.

PH: Were they scary to you?

CS: This is so hard to explain. There were no lights in there, but we could see a bit. Not too cold or too hot. When this happened, we started shooting. When you turn on a light bulb, you look at it and you can't see. We all found our way back. I thought I'd only been in there for a few minutes. Someone pulled me out, and everything went back to normal. They told me they had to take care of my eye or I'd lose it. Next thing I knew, I was outside. I figured my people pulled me out. I have medical records that show that some insects sprayed something into my eye and I wore a patch over my eye for a week. Do you know of any insect that can do that?

PH: Did your people really pull you out?

CS: I was never actually told how it happened. They told me when I asked how they got me out of there, "We didn't." I think they have no idea how I got out of there.

PH: Did these beings call you by name also?

CS: Not that I remember. I was in a lot of pain.

PH: Did bullets hit those beings?

CS: If they did, they had no effect.

PH: And those beings were not hostile?

CS: They were not hostile. We were shooting at them. We will always react that way, with violence. It's the way humans are. It's been about twenty years now, and we will no longer send aircraft after a UFO, but I guarantee you that every pilot who sees one wants to open fire on it.

PH: You've described different kinds of beings. Do you feel that there is an imminent invasion, or are they just observing?

CS: I don't think there's any plan for invasion, but there are also rogue elements out there. These entities look different than us, some look very similar to us, but the intelligence and the essence of being an intelligent species is there. That mandates that you can live at peace in the universe. Rogue elements might be trying to impose themselves on the universe, though I haven't seen anything like that happen, and I think we would have help in that situation.

PH: There is one being you mentioned, named Korona. He is always with you?

CS: Yes, they say they're assigned to someone for life.

PH: Is he a grey?

CS: He's green. Sort of human like, but with rough skin––not scales. Big eyes, like teardrops with the pointed part in. He has a sense of humor, sometimes misguided. I once asked him how I could know that he wasn't just my imagination, and he said, can

your imagination do this? And he smashed a plate. Someone came in and asked me why I smashed the plate, and I didn't.

PH: Did he give you a message for humanity or for yourself?

CS: They're actually trying to understand how we really work. You don't go in and say, take me to your leader. Heaven forbid, look at our government right now. If our government was a family unit, they would be the most dysfunctional in the history of mankind. If you say that, all you'll hear is what the leaders want you to hear. So they observe quietly, living among us. They hook on to one person early in life and they follow that person throughout life. If you have a child who has imaginary friends and they say they're real, you might consider that he's actually telling the truth.

Photo left to right: Researcher Tom Hamlin, Paola Harris and Clifford Stone, Roswell, New Mexico, October 2, 2011.

PH: Korona could empathize with your feelings?

CS: Yes, absolutely. When I was upset, he was upset. When I was little, my mom was in the hospital and I ran and hid behind the sink, and I felt this bony hand scratching the top of my head as if to say, you can run but you can't hide. I went running again and my aunt tried to make me sit in a chair, but I couldn't. Eventually I calmed down and Korona said to me, you're too young for us really to explain, but we're not ghosts, and we're not for everyone to see. Hopefully you will learn some things from me, but I will learn a lifetime from you. That was the first time I was told why he was there and wasn't going away.

PH: And somebody knew that this was happening.

CS: Captain Brown showed up in 1957 when I saw my first UFO. I was 6 or 7 years old, and I knew that we were not alone in the universe. A couple of weeks later, TRUE magazine came out with a UFO story. Since it was a men's magazine, the druggist wouldn't let me buy it. So, Captain Brown shows up and buys two copies of the magazine, and says he's interested in UFOs too. He bought me a root beer float and talked to my parents, and from that time on, we struck up a relationship.

PH: You were in high school when you found out you were rejected from military service?

CS: It was in November of 1967. We had a recruiter come to our high school and I passed all the written tests, but failed the physical. I was told that I was 4F, permanently rejected from the military service. On graduation I went back home, then got a letter from my draft board saying they wanted to reevaluate me. I took all the written tests again, passed them again with very high scores, and was selected for Officers' Training School

if I wanted to go. I still had medical problems, and a captain came out and told me they'd be sending me home shortly. A colonel came out and sent the captain home, then asked me if I really wanted to be in the military. I said I did, that I had a moral obligation to serve my country. He said he'd give me a chance. I think he was there to make sure I got into the military because of what was happening in my life. For interacting with visitors, they don't have a school for that. They have to pick out people who have already been chosen by the visitors for interaction. The bigger interest is what we are doing to ourselves.

PH: Whose bigger interest?

CS: Big business, for one.

PH: So, they're using short-term strategies, and this was the short cut they used to find people for this program.

CS: When we set out to become intergalactic travelers, we threaten other ecological systems on other planets indiscriminately. So they are concerned about what we're doing. In order to do it without them stopping us, we have to begin caring about the other guy. Our visitors will let themselves be destroyed rather than hurt another race.

PH: Because they have a different ethic, not selfish.

CS: Look, just recently we've accepted slavery. It has never been right, it has never been moral. But it has been accepted. Recently, we have evolved to the point where we no longer accept it, we no longer tolerate it.

PH: Do you think humanity will ever have spiritual growth?

CS: If we don't we will destroy ourselves.

PH: So, we have no choice. We have to evolve with our

technology, also.

CS: You have to evolve with your technology or you fall victim to it. Remember that movie I told you about, the 1958 Power of Decision? The character existed for two purposes–– it would deter war by making any country that planned to attack the United States with nuclear weapons, understand that there would be no survivors. That we would survive long enough, with enough power, to annihilate them. In the movie, the Soviet Union evolves enough to think they can do it. It shows that we failed our initial assignment and did not deter nuclear war. The second mission was the total annihilation of whatever force attacked the United States, by dropping more nuclear bombs on them. All you have to do after you have won the war, which would last only 36 hours, is to survive for the next twelve years. Anything growing, worldwide, it's no longer edible. Same for livestock.

PH: So, it's not really a deterrent, but game over.

CS: We destroyed ourselves by our technology.

PH: How old were you when you got your first assignment after entering the army at age eighteen?

CS: Nineteen. Pine Gap, Pennsylvania was one of the first times I walked up to the craft and they were all dead. I walked up alone, because if anything was going to happen, they'd only lose one person. I was sort of thinking that maybe it was manmade, but when I got a good look I realized it wasn't.

PH: Did you ever go to one that had anything alive inside?

CS: Oh yeah.

PH: Can you ever talk about this, legally?

CS: There's no way you can ever legally talk about it; they'll

shoot you. They only care about what you can prove. Say there's a film, and you get that film out. They will kill to keep that film from getting out. If we have an airliner up, and we know that there's a hijacker on board who is going to strike a target, there is a standing order to shoot it down over the least populated area possible so as to minimize the loss of life. This shows that we see it as morally right to violate our own laws in order to protect life. When it comes to UFOs, we have no idea what world reaction is going to be when we say not only have we made contact with et life that is even more intelligent than us, so vastly intelligent that we're like ants, they have been among us for millenia. There's nothing to worry about; they're not evil. How many people do you think will buy that? Remember that human reaction we talked about? So the whole situation is that the fear factor isn't there any more. How we're going to do it, and what the reaction is going to be, we don't know yet.

PH: Do you think the people should know?

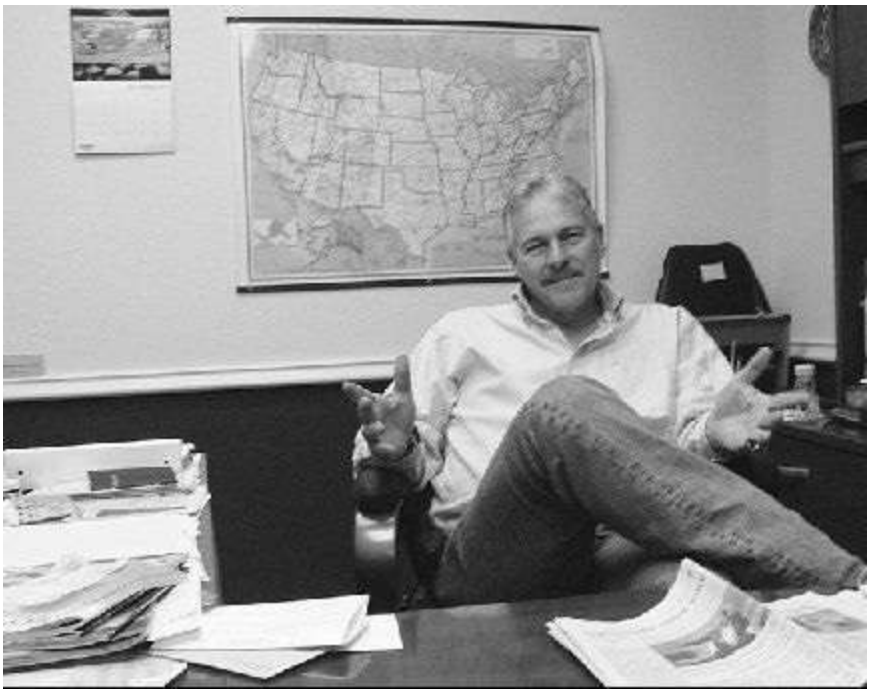
CS: I think the people should know, and I think there are a lot of people out there who do know. But, I also know people who have lost their families because we lied and said there was nothing to it. The two police officers, who chased the UFO for 67 miles and saw a being, have been attacked by those who didn't see it and by debunkers. One of the officers took a photo, but his life was destroyed. People want to know why he didn't shoot. What if it had been a person dressed up, and he had shot at it? It is time to tell the truth for our children and grandchildren.

Pictured: Back row: Hong Nguyen (Daughter), Hanh Thi Stone (Wife), Clifford Earl Stone, Linh Duy Bui (Grandson) and Josh Tessier (Son-in-Law). Front row: Anh Huyen Bui (Granddaughter), Huu Nghia Bui (Grandson) and Adele Tessier (Granddaughter). Not Pictured: Julia Tessier (Daughter), George Stone (Son) and John Stone (Son). Deceased: Robert Stone (Son) and Anh Nguyen (Son). Photo courtesy Clifford Stone.

The Historic Stephenville UFO Sightings: Interview with Primary Witness Steve Allen

Revolutionary for me is the debut of the 2012 Women's UFO Symposium in Glen Rose, Texas, a little ways from the Stephenville UFO Sightings of January 8, 2008. I organized this unique venue for two reasons. One, I was impressed by the courage of Angelia Joiner and wanted to give her an award for her courage covering this story and jeopardizing her job. I wanted to do it on her home turf. Secondly, I have experienced the difficulty of women to communicate their research at UFO conferences and enter this male-dominated field. I wished to strike a proper balance in a pivotal astrological year 2012. The event does have male participation in the all male panel of Stephenville witnesses and the extraordinary presence of producer/ director/ cameraman, James Carman who will be screening of his documentary *The Hidden Hand*.

In the process of organizing the Symposium, I hope the first of many events, I interviewed pilot and businessman Steve Allen about his sighting. It changed his worldview, and he was courageous enough to talk about it publically. I was so impressed with his candor and his account of the events; I decided to include his interview to this revised version of the book. These new additions emphasize my obsession with historical accuracy from first hand witnesses. In the end, the future will need to revert to the past to get the truth, the real story, and the connections to this mystery. We need to connect all the dots, not just the ones we, ourselves, research. We need it all: national, international and cosmic. It is an exciting journey we are on and I invite the reader to join us.



Steve Allen, Glen Rose, Texas, December, 2011.

Interview with Steve Allen
Stephenville UFO Witness
Glen Rose, Texas
December 2, 2011

"And I said, 'Please, Mr. President, the gig's up; the cat is out of the bag. You can tell us what's going on.' I said, 'We're intelligent people. We're not going to panic, you know. We can take it, whatever it is. But, we need to know about it.'" ––Steve Allen

Paola: Can you describe what you saw on the night of January 8, 2008 near Stephenville, Texas? They were lights. Correct?

Steve: The first time we observed it was totally quiet, no cars, no airplanes, anything. I looked off to the east and saw some very intense bright lights coming towards us at a high rate of speed. It was unlike anything I'd ever seen before. It had four flashing lights. Appeared to be on the four corners of the object. They were moving in exactly the same speed altitude

everything, complete unison. As it came past us you could see seven flashing lights across the back. When the craft or object came to a stop over the Stephenville area the seven horizontal flashing lights went to an arch shape like a football then several seconds later the lights went to a vertical shape still flashing in no particular pattern. Then appeared an additional set of seven lights vertical. So two sets of the seven lights. Then they burst into a very unusual plaque or rectangle-like plane for two or three seconds and after that they simply disappeared. Eight minutes after the first time we saw it, we ran back outside and it was coming back again from the west to the east, basically towards President Bush's house and our nuclear plant in Glen Rose, and it went away. And then it had two round, red orbs in the back of it. About three seconds later here comes two F-16s in full pursuit of it. Full afterburner! It acted like it was toying with them. They couldn't catch it and they headed off toward the President's house, off that way. Where they were going or what I don't know. There were two extremely bright red lights in the rear of the object. I've never seen anything like it before in my life. Real bright. They were together for a few seconds. After, we saw the F-16 Jets chasing them. They all just shot off. They were not making any noise like a plane or a jet. This object was on radar ola: And do you feel that it needs to be studied more and people would stop calling the "little green men" syndrome, go to little green men the way they automatically go to it? Because you saw something; you know you saw something?

Steve: Oh, positively. It needs to be studied. Perhaps we might know more than they tell us. For some reason I have not requested the president, like when Bush was president, to tell us what was going on. ABC was here in this office one day and

they said, “What do you have to say to the world?” And I said, “Please, Mr. President, the gig’s up; the cat is out of the bag. You can tell us what’s going on.” I said, “We’re intelligent people. We’re not going to panic, you know. We can take it, whatever it is. But we need to know about it.”

Paola: Do you think he knows about it or are you encouraging him to find out about it?

Steve: I think they know about it. I just about bet they know.

Paola: You do think they know about it.

Steve: No question about it, they know about it.

Paola: And what are the reasons? Can I suggest that one of the reasons that you think they do is because they came so close to his place in Crawford, Texas?

Steve: No, I don’t think that’s the reason. I just think a person in power knows. If you’ll listen to the past presidents, what they said just here and there, little snippets, like Kennedy has made some statements, then after there’s been several people, and General Patton also has made some statement that the next major World War III will not be a war of here. It will be an interplanetary war in space. So high-ranking dignitaries let just little bits and pieces out and if you connect all the dots per se, you might be able to figure out what it is.

Paola: You know, Steve, you saw dots, and you’re trying to connect them. They were just a bunch of dots in the sky. Tell me, just in your opinion, and this is just your opinion: Do you think this is a hostile situation?

Steve: No. I was very concerned and worried the first several weeks afterward. I began loosing sleep after that. And Angelia [Joiner, the reporter who broke the story, internationally, of

the Stephenville sighting] called me and I started loosing sleep immediately after that because I thought it could be a hostile situation. Why would our F-16s be chasing this? If it was one of ours, why would they chase it? And so that didn't make sense. If it was one of ours, they wouldn't be chasing it. And I thought, well, what's the problem here? Then I thought, well maybe, if they have enough technology to do that, then they could as well have enough technology to erase us all in the blink of an eye.

And nobody that I know of has ever been hurt or I've never heard of anybody being hurt or has heard of anybody being hurt or killed or abducted or whatever. But I'm sure they have been but we just don't know about it. But I decided it wasn't as harmful or great enough of a fear to appear to concern myself with. It kind of eased my mind, and of course I talked to the Lears, you know, and they told me about their little projects and several others, and it was just almost an information overload. I am a country boy from USA here.

Paola: That's John Lear.

Steve: I don't have anything to gain. A lot of people know me and I'm maybe a lot of things, but I'm not a liar. And I know what I saw. So it was very intriguing as to what it is and as to what they are here for or what they're doing. So who knows if they've been here for millions of years or who knows how long they've been here. There are more questions than answers.

Paola: Well, as an investigator/journalist I like your approach because you're very open-minded and haven't made a decision as to what it is. It's just out of this world.

Steve: That's the only decision I have made. I don't think it would be anything that we have, plus us chasing it doesn't make sense. And reports after we saw it this side of Waco they

were still chasing it and the jets broke the sound barrier. And that's against the law. You can't do that. So somebody had to authorize those jets to exceed the speed limit for something.

Paola: So interesting.

Steve: I think the radar report had definitely seen an object in the sky, there's no doubt about that. This object was on radar for over an hour. There were three different times recorded. When we found radar failure, no document was there. The question was asked, exactly what was it? I don't think it's from this Earth. Whatever it is would be pure speculation. We'd say it was from somewhere besides here. I wouldn't say little green men, but it's something different. And that also shows up on that radar report, when they blanked or blacked out all the log books of those planes, so obviously they had known it's something that we have to hide. If we could just talk to some of those jet jockeys, I bet we'd get a story.

Paola: Okay. Now the guy that did the radar report is the man that works for MUFON?

Steve: Robert Powell works for MUFON and Glen Schultz was the second person.

Paola: Robert Powell. And those two people worked for MUFON. And we have to give MUFON credit. But Glen Shultz.

Steve: Robert Powell is MUFON, yes.

Paola: And so what happened is that they went for the actual data, which is what MUFON does––get actual data.

Steve: The Freedom of Information Act, six different radars. And they got the data––25 million pieces of data. It took them quite a while to compile it but they worked hard and diligently to do what they did. Nobody has disputed what they did.

They're experts in their field, and I'm not 100% certain, but I think Glen Schultz is the one that did the Lockerbie, Scotland crash. Angelia knows more about that than I do as far as his resume per se. So, yes, the radar data sure backs up everything that everybody was saying, especially the locations and the speeds, you know, the phenomenal speeds. It came down to what I call zero MPH, but come to find out it was something like 20-something MPH which seems stopped at a distance. If you're looking at it from 2 or 3 miles off you can't tell if it's 20 MPH or stopped. It was definite running very rapid, flying very fast when we first saw it and then rapidly decelerated. That's when it came to a stop in Stephenville.

Pictured: Steve Allen and Paola Harris examine the radar data. Glen Rose, Texas, December, 2011.

Paola: So, one thing you said that really interested me, too. You said and we're holding this conference in Glen Rose, and that it was between Glen Rose and Stephenville, and it went on to Stephenville. So it was in the air between two cities.

Steve: Correct. Exactly. And I happen to live in Glen Rose and

we have mutual friends in Stephenville. I didn't know anybody, I didn't know Angelia, I didn't know Leroy Gaidan, I didn't know anybody at that time. So we all kind of met under unusual circumstances.

Paola: Do you want to talk about that? What the circumstances were that you came forth first? You opened the door. You let the cat out of the bag. You opened the door. You can go ahead and elaborate on that. If anybody else saw it and you were open enough to give out your telephone number.

Steve: Sure. I called the airport the next morning, the Stephenville Airport. They are very dear friends of mine, good people, and told them about it. They hadn't seen anything but they did hear some jets that previous night, and so they called Fort Worth radar and Fort Worth radar is usually friendly and they seemed like they were a little hostile towards them, not hostile, but just not their usual Texas hospitality/friendly selves. So they thought that was a little strange and so I basically hit a brick wall with our airport, saying they tried but they couldn't find any information out, and that's when I called the Stephenville Empire Tribune and spoke with the editor and the editor connected me with Angelia . Angelia asked, "Would you mind doing a story and let me print your name?" And I said, "Make sure put my phone number in there as well. Surely somebody must have had a photograph of the sunset and maybe at that time they got a picture of this and they don't know it. Because it was a very bright and unusual sunset with the strangest looking cloud I've ever seen. Sunsets are always beautiful here.

Paola: Strange-looking cloud in what way? Describe the cloud. Luminous or huge or what?

Steve: No, it wasn't that large. It was kind of a luminous would be a good word for it…the configuration and color of it was very strange. It was like a…I hate to say it…an anomaly in the sky itself, but it seemed strange as well. Just like nothing that I'd ever seen quite like this.

Paola: Bright white light or…?

Steve: Real bright orange and red, you know.

Paola: Orange and red. Okay.

Steve: Kind of matched the atmosphere at the time. Red-orange atmosphere, too. When all this took place it was slightly after sundown but it was still twilight outside. You had great visibility. It wasn't like it was pitch-black or dark. You could still see and drive with your car lights off.

Paola: So it was an atmosphere where actually your friends were looking at the sunset and you just turned around and saw something not the opposite way.

Steve: Yes. And it might be that it just kind of came in out of… I'm at a loss for words. But, it just kind of appeared speeding towards us at a very high rate of speed and rapidly decelerating. As it came past us I did kind of have the feeling that maybe it was here and that it watching us. I don't know why I had that feeling but I just felt that way.

Paola: Well, that's important because I think that when you cover a story you need to cover not only the sighting but also the impressions that people have and the reaction they have to it. So you felt they were watching you. It was a reciprocal kind of situation, whatever it was, was aware. Now, going back to the fact that that's how you hooked up with Angelia Joiner, because she did the story, and because you allowed your

telephone number to be there. How soon after that did you get witnesses coming forth?

Steve: I think it was the next day. Obviously I saw it on January 8, so it was that afternoon, January 9 that I called and talked to everybody at the airport. Then Angelia printed the story that came out on January 10th. And, immediately when the paper hit, our phone lines lit up, all five lines was lit all day long. We couldn't conduct our normal transportation/trucking business. So I was busy fielding calls and trying to take notes of who called and what they saw and when they saw it, and where they were at and if they would mind talking to Ricky Sorrels, Leroy Gaidan, and quite a few others. Most everybody didn't want to talk, but after I talked to them and said, "You know I saw it and several others saw it" they said, "Well, what the heck, I'll come forth as well." Leroy's word was, "Hey, I can't talk about this. I'm an elected official." And I said, "Come on, Leroy, I'm in the spotlight in this by myself. Help me out a little bit here." And he said, "You know what, I don't care. Let's just go for it." And I said, "Okay, I'll put you down." So the rest is kind of history. Obviously Leroy Gaitan is the constable and a good, honorable person as well with good character, so he's a credible witness as well.

Paola: And therefore, as this went viral, and it went viral to the Larry King Show and other shows, and what it did…and this is good because the United States is opening up to at least some reporting of this. So, the thing is, do you feel that our media could do more?

Steve: Oh, yes. I think they could. I don't know if the media could do anything because our elected officials, our government…I don't know who you would look at, whether it's Air Force or Central Intelligence Agency.

Paola: Who would control the media?

Steve: Intelligence agencies. I don't know if they control the media or not, but, I think they would have a pretty good idea of what happened here.

Paola: Okay. So, you're the same group of people that think that there is, in other words, I don't know how to word this. Do you think there is a cover-up of some kind?

Steve: Oh yes, absolutely.

Paola: That there is a cover-up. So I'm going to go to the next question which would be, "Do you feel that people could handle the truth?"

Steve: I had a Colonel call me one night and he says, "You know, if the people ever found out what was going on, it could cause chaos. It could cause the stock market to collapse, it could cause religious beliefs to be disregarded, what everybody's stood for all this time, it could cause a lot of panic, and…."

Paola: If you had to weigh that, or, if you believed that; if you had to weight that vs. the cover-up, has that been a conflict in your mind?

Steve: Not really. I feel all my beliefs. I try to be a good Christian person and I try to do what's correct. None of us are perfect as far as that goes, so I've tried to stay on course with what I believe in until proven otherwise. It would take quite a bit to sway my beliefs as far as that goes.

Paola: So what do you think?

Steve: It tells you about this in the Bible. Almost the same thing with the story of "Ezekiel's Wheel."

Paola: Okay. This deals with "Ezekiel's Wheel." The Bible has references to possible UFO sightings when talking about

“Ezekiel’s Wheel.” So, the big question is “do you think that people should know?”

Steve: I believe that they should know. Absolutely. Yes. I believe they should know, absolutely.

Paola: You think the truth is important?

Steve: The truth is very important. Usually the truth will set you free.

Section Two
Unconventional Wisdom from Unconventional People

"Few men are willing to brave the disapproval of their fellows, the censure of their colleagues, the wrath of their society. Moral courage is a rarer commodity than bravery in battle or great intelligence. Yet it is the one essential, vital quality for those who seek to change a world that yields most painfully to change." –– Robert Kennedy (November 20, 1925 – June 6, 1968)

Interview with the Honorable Paul Hellyer

On September 23, 2005, in Canada, a most extraordinary event occurred in history. One courageous man, speaking at a conference at the University of Toronto said: "UFOs are as real as airplanes." He was no ordinary gentleman, but the former Minister of Defence of Canada. I was supposed to be in Canada for that conference. As fate had it, I could not attend because of illness, so I flew to Canada five months later to meet him and get perhaps the most important testimony of my journalistic career. He is an extraordinary man who speaks in ordinary terms and his words contain "unconventional wisdom." This section is dedicated to the courageous public servants–– members of government––who call to search for the truth.

Interview with the Honorable Paul Hellyer
Former Canadian Minister of National Defence
Toronto, Canada
February 24, 2006

Paola: I wanted to interview the Honorable Paul Hellyer, who has come out with a speech using terms that are so unpopular

in Politics. So I think we will start by asking him: When did you get interested in the whole, entire, UFO field? When were you curious about what was in the skies? Was it when you were working as Defense Minister under Lester Pierson? Was that a curiosity? Was it when you were young? When was it?

Hellyer: Not really. It is very recent. When I was Minister of National Defence, I had reports crossing my desk about sightings. They just indicated as to whether there was some natural explanation or whether there wasn't and I was far too busy at the time to worry about it very much because I was the Minister who united the Armed Forces: the Royal Canadian Army, The Royal Canadian Navy and the Royal Canadian Air Force into a single armed force. This was really unprecedented in the Western World. Robert McNamara, who was the US Secretary of Defense at the time, said this is what all the ministers wanted to do but didn't have the guts to do. It was war really to accomplish this.

Paola: This was McNamara under Kennedy in the 1960s?

Hellyer: That was the 1960s, so I was just too busy to be curious about UFOs and other things. It is only, I suppose, in very recent times, when some friends started sending me things. Frankly, I was too busy to read them, or I thought I was, so I kept putting them off and I put them on the shelf for future reference. I must admit that it was only after I took Colonel Corso's book to my little lodge in Muskoka a year ago and sat down and read it that it really tweaked my interest because I knew right away it was real. I said, "Hey! This is something I want to find out about because this is important and there are a lot of policy issues that I'm going to have to think about."

Paola: This book, who gave it to you?

Hellyer: I guess it was Pierre Juneau. Pierre has been sending me quite a bit of stuff. He is very judicious. He knows that I am overloaded and you looked at my desk earlier so you know that it is true.

Paola: But you are an activist in many, many areas.

Hellyer: That is true. Yes, I'm just going night and day. People ask me what I do now that I'm retired and the only difference is that I only work six days a week now––and it is more or less true. But I read the Corso book and I knew that it was authentic. I asked myself, you know, would anyone be capable of making that fiction? I only read a few books a year and the Corso book was so convincing that I could not make up my mind one hundred per cent until right at the end, whether it was fact or fiction. I said, "Is there any possibility that this book could be fiction?" And the answer that I concluded is, no, that it couldn't be because there were too many times, too many names, too many places and there are too many references that I would know about as the former Minister of National Defence, that I would recognize as being legitimate. All of a sudden I became deeply interested and deeply concerned.

Paola: And I also know, because it was part of a story that was written about you, that you called a four-star general in the United States to confirm…

Hellyer: I am not at liberty to say who it was or how many stars he had. When I was reading the book, my nephew asked what I was reading and I told him and so he was, like a large proportion of the population, a skeptic and did not mind admitting it. So he went away, as he had been visiting for a few days. Then a couple of weeks later he called me. He said: "I had been talking to my friend, the retired General, and I told him

about the book. He said, quote: “Every word is true and more!” And he said, “Now I want to get my hands on that book!”

Paola: Well, the book was a best seller and it did come out programmed at the 50th anniversary of the Roswell crash. We have groups who believe that Roswell didn’t even happen–– where Colonel Corso, in the book and in the Dawn of a New Age, which are his original notes, he tells about seeing a body in Fort Riley, Kansas, in 1947. So it is not just his work at the Pentagon but it is the fact that he did also see an alien body, which is very important. So, you are telling me that this changed the way you thought about a lot of things and you were curious and you also considered it serious. Did you consider it serious because it is a matter of National Security or did you consider it serious because, as a human being, it changed the way you looked at the world?

Hellyer: It made me very curious and concerned because I understand policy issues when they stare me in the face. So I said, “There are all kinds of policy issues here.” First off, General Twining, General Nathan Twining, designated these people as “enemy aliens.” So my first question is: Are they still designated enemy aliens? Because if they are, then the United States Armed Forces are preparing to kill them. Then I asked myself, “If they start taking on a superior technology, what is going to happen? Are they just going to take it or are they going to retaliate? What are the consequences of such a thing for the United States and for the world?” It is just absolutely, tremendously important. And, of course, other policy considerations are, well, that if this technology is so absolutely wonderful, it has the makings of saving our planet from environmental destruction. We could get away from burning fossil fuels and save the ozone layer and stop the ice caps from

melting and raising the water levels world-wide and stop disrupting the weather patterns that are upsetting a lot of people. I think upsetting them a lot more than they are willing to admit ––and so this is reason two, which is tremendously important. The third one, of course, is that it certainly reinforces that the officials are not telling the truth about Roswell. I know that. I heard some of them on television not too long ago and the party line was still that it was a weather balloon and I heard dozens of others say they were sworn to secrecy. So I said, "Wait a minute! Give me a break! You are swearing people to secrecy because of weather balloon crashes?"

Paola: It is not logical.

Hellyer: Well, it is not credible! So when we are talking about these things, they can accuse the people who say that the crash was real of not being credible but I would say that the people who would say it was a weather balloon are by no means credible. So I say to myself that this cover-up, because I am convinced that there has been a systematic cover-up, a thorough and very successful cover-up for half a century or more, the whole cover-up lends credence to Lewis Latham's (the editor of Harper's Magazine) theory of the two governments. I suspect you are familiar with that?

Paola: The shadow government and the real government?

Hellyer: The permanent and the provisional. He says that the permanent United States Government is the Fortune Five Hundred list and the top legal firms of Washington that do their legal work and the top PR companies that do their public relations, or their propaganda––if you want to be a little more vulgar about it––and the top civil servants, both military and

civil. They run the United States and every few years, and let me paraphrase a little bit with the license I have as a former politician, they have a charade called an election and the permanent government picks the actors to go on stage and read the scripts written by the programmed government and they try to pick actors that won't improvise too much, and who will do as they are told in effect, and then they give them the money to get elected and nobody else need apply because it has become such an expensive business, especially in the United States, where they raise these huge, astronomical amounts of money to get elected. Anyone who doesn't have the backing of the Establishment just isn't in the race. They call it Democracy but this is just nonsense. It confirms for me that we have a real problem in countries that we call Democracies, where we are basically the pawns of the people who consider themselves to be the proprietors of the orders of our society, and it does not often matter who we elect, they are not going to change anything of significance. These are fundamental policy questions that intrigue me, not just intrigue me but which I think have to be resolved first, not only for the benefit of the United States but for all mankind, because we tag along with the United States because whatever they do we are involved in. I guess it is just in today's paper, our new Minister of National Defence, under the new minority government under Steven Harper, has said that they are going to reopen the question of the anti-missile Defense. Right away my antennae go up. We are going become part of this business of building a system designed to take the 'alien intruders' on for size. Do we want to be part of that? Do we want to be part of it without knowing what we are doing, which is obviously the case? Does our Prime Minister? Is he in the loop? Absolutely not! I'm sure he is not! Is our Minister of Defense, who is a Brigadier General, in the loop?

Well I'm sure he is not. He's just going along with the conventional wisdom that we have to build a system that protects us from rogue missiles from heaven knows where; the party line, the cover stories and I say, "You know this is not good enough!" We have got to have some facts and figures and some real hard information before we start spending money and time and diverting resources from far more important things to be part of a project that probably is not good for us.

Paola: So you are for disclosure. Do you realize; if it seems like you're saying that you are for that it is like pulling the rug out from under a lot of institutions that are well established, including the financial, the religious and the political institutions, and that is the excuse a lot of people have been using for keeping the secret still a secret? How would you deal with that?

Hellyer: I believe in seeking the truth. In the 'Good Book' it says: "The Truth will set you free." I don't think there is any other approach. I don't think you can live a lie. I am a religious person and I am not the least bit concerned about disclosure. And I'm absolutely determined that we find out what the truth is and I think that it is just natural and inevitable that there are other species elsewhere in the galaxy, or galaxies, that are more advanced technologically that we are, and probably more advanced spiritually as well, and we should cooperate with them and learn from them and work together to make a better world. We should start with making our world better and then we could cooperate to make a better galaxy or galaxies. These are the kinds of projects and policies we should be adopting and not trying to spend hundreds and millions of dollars when we have millions of people on our own planet dying of starvation and ill health. I put on the Scale of Justice a project

costing a few hundred million dollars that happens to fit the temperament of the military industrial complex as against saving a few hundred million lives, which otherwise are people who otherwise don't have a chance. We are just not helping, when we have the capacity and resources to help them and to give them a more abundant life.

Paola: Well, this is also entering into a philosophy. As a Ufologist, I feel that we have plenty of sightings. We have been recording them forever. We have thousands and thousands. This is a phenomenon that, from South America to Europe to Asia, we have enough proof that there are sightings of these anomalous objects. Now we are into the philosophy of: "What do we do with the truth? What are the policy issues?" This goes into a brand new area that Dr. Michael Salla is interested in, called "Exopolitics." Would you agree, that, even in the future, we need to get together; even at a grassroots level––since the politicians are not doing it––to develop some policies concerning contact?

Hellyer: Well, I'm sure we have to do something. I applaud them for their efforts. We have to do something positive by way of cooperation and Alfred Webre suggested a ten-year period of contact and cooperation. I think that would be marvelous––and heaven only knows where it will lead. I think it would be far, far more positive than spending the next ten years trying to build the military system capable of starting an intergalactic war.

Paola: Which we might not win.

Hellyer: Well of course not, but that is a possibility that some military people would never take into account. They say we will just keep working until we win. I understand the military mind.

Paola: It is also that war makes "money." We are dealing with a

complex that lives on this moneymaking situation.

Hellyer: It only makes money for certain people but it puts the rest of us in debt under our very peculiar monetary system which, you may or may not know, is one of my particular lifetime interests.

Paola: Yes! I see you have written other books on economics. I did not know you are so prolific in this area; books like *Surviving the Global Financial Crisis and Agenda and Plan for Action*. You have written several books about the monetary system.

Hellyer: This is such a peculiar system that we expend the money to win a war. But the way we do it is by going further into debt and, consequently, every time we have another war, the people have the additional debt burden put on them, while a few people who own the munitions factories are the beneficiaries, but the beneficiaries of the munitions factories are not the ones that do the fighting. They are the ones who have luxury continuing during the wartime period. It is the ordinary people that do the fighting and lose their sons and fathers and uncles and brothers, then have to carry debt afterwards, instead of having the freedom to regroup their lives and make them better. There are some humongous policy issues involved. They are so big that I find it difficult to find words to describe them.

Paola: Now on a grass-roots level, if you were to give us advice, what would it be? We are using a lot of what you say in our *Area 51 Magazine* because you have been courageous enough to ask President Bush to reconsider a Base on the Moon and so forth. But on a grass-roots level, those people who realize that what you are saying is wise and what you are saying is really

the truth. What advice would you give us all, to do some changing to look to a better future? You are speaking on the political level because you are speaking as someone who has a particular position but what would you advise on a grass-roots level? We, the people, what would you suggest we do?

Hellyer: I think the people should inform themselves of the information available. There is a lot of information. You were saying that the Disclosure Project drew little press.

Paola: Steven Greer's Disclosure Project had the qualifications of a very well orchestrated "media" event, dealing with the truth about UFOs.

Hellyer: We need to use the Internet globally to spread the word and use that vehicle for the grassroots people to demand of their politicians, some action. In Canada recently, a group of friends are asking the Senate Defense Committee to hold an inquiry and to interview some of the people present that Greer had, and some others you know, and to talk to them. I think in Canada they will get some press.

Paola: Do you think that Canada will receive outside pressure not to do that?

Hellyer: They may, but if they buckle under it will be just one more disappointing aspect of our being concerned with what the white elephant tells us to do. But if we did it here, it could provide some pressure. The communications goes from South-to-North. It is not unusual that they go North-to-South. Some listen to the Canadian Broadcasting Corporation, and so forth, and if they got enough good publicity here some of it could leak south of the border and they could encourage doing something. I think that they should demand of members of Congress: "What are you doing with our money? What projects? What

secret projects are there and what are the consequences militarily?" and, "Do you consider these people enemy aliens and, if so, why? Prove it to us and show us the evidence." Encourage more Americans to demand that members of Congress do something. I think the only thing we can do is to keep putting pressure on politicians and say, "Hey! You are elected to look after our interests not to do what intelligence organizations tell you to do!" They are not elected by anybody. They are not accountable to anybody. They are just a bunch of people who think they, sort of, own the world and have their own little club and they lie to each other––and once you get in the habit, it spills over in what you are likely to tell the public. We have a very great responsibility to try to put pressure on the politicians to say the time has come: full disclosure. We want to know, and then we can decide whether we want to embark on a project to save the planet in cooperation with others or let you continue on the road to make bigger and better hydrogen bombs to blow up bunkers; to do a lot of things which will ultimately result in a virtually uninhabitable planet, or relatively uninhabitable, and that seems to be the choice.

Paola: OK. To wrap up this interview, you had mentioned that you are writing another book and that you are going to dedicate a chapter to this subject. We need more of that. Can you just give us an inkling of what that chapter will say or will reflect? [Note: *Light at the End of the Tunnel: A Survival Manual for the Human Species* was released in 2010. You can order it on Amazon.]

Hellyer: Just basically the things that I've been saying to you. Starting with evidence of people who have a lot of experience in this area. I'm not going to give a lot of examples because you

can't put much in one chapter and I do not want the book to be too long, I'd like some people to read it! To maybe get eight or ten of the most credible people who have personal knowledge and to talk to them myself, so I can quote them verbatim, and to say these are credible witnesses and I believe them to be telling the truth. I do not believe that a lot of other people are telling the truth and the time has come for full disclosure. In my own words, give the reasons why the time has come for full disclosure. I will develop some political aspects of this in other parts of the book, where I'll be talking about policy, including momentary policy. So there will a few threads tying this together.

Paola: Well, it is all connected. It has a "futuristic" aspect to it, a philosophy of Exopolitics, of how to deal with this reality. In other words, let's have a say in the way this goes in the future! I think that's why we are so elated that you came forward, because it gives people hope. We have to give people hope that we can design a future. Also, I wanted to ask you, when will this book come out, so we can look forward to it?

Hellyer: I think it will take the best of two years to write. I want to research it properly and I want to make it as authentic as I'm capable of making it. I have no deadline, but at the same time I want to get started as soon as possible, and get on with it. I kind of hope this is out before the next presidential election. It is not important, in a sense, but, in a sense, I may have some advice for the electorate for the kinds of alternatives that they should look at for party policy, in both the United States and Canada, and it will be my final effort I think, so I want to make it a good one and I'll try to tie together the lose ends as part of a whole.

Paola: You mentioned the United States and Canada but I wanted to add that we, in Europe, are following you very

closely because whatever happens here is reflected on the other side of the ocean and I think what you have done for us is make us one global community, as far as understanding that this matter affects everybody.

Hellyer: It is a global community and everyone is affected and the monetary system is universal; I don't restrict it to North America. But these things we are talking about are universal. The fact that we have starving people in one part of the world and rich people in the other, who are overeating, is universal. This is not restricted to any geographical area, although I will concentrate on the one I know best. We can have a world of peace if we have men and women of good will. What are missing, at the moment, are men and women of good will. We are more interested in killing each other then helping each other, so if somehow we can turn that around and reset our priorities; to change the direction of our lives and expenditures to emancipate mankind and other kind. Start with the thought: "Let's start to look forward to a positive future." Not a utopia, but something positive. And it is possible; we have the means! We have the technology; everything we need, except the political will to do it. That is what is lacking. General Eisenhower warned us about this, I guess he knew about the UFO question at the time when he said it: "Beware of the military-industrial complex," and he probably concluded that some of the information from the ETs was getting into the wrong hands and that, somehow, we had to re-establish public control over what was going on.

Paola: Well, you have given us some hope and, in Europe, most of us are one hundred percent behind you and we will be waiting for this book. We need to develop a philosophy of Exopolitics on a grass-roots level. Having someone of your

caliber speak helps validate this exopolitical view. It will help not only us but also the whole, entire planet. Thank you.

Hellyer: Let's hope we can work together and do something.

The Death of the Fourth Estate: Interview with Dr. Steven Greer

Through *exopolitical* activists like Steven Bassett and Dr. Michael Salla, we applaud a new decade of contact, through citizen diplomacy, with the Extraterrestrial intelligent beings who are active on and around the Earth for several decades at least, who seem to harbor no hostile or predatory designs. On the contrary, some of them at least exhibit real concern for our survival as a species and for the ecological health of the planet. Lt. Colonel Wendelle Stevens (USAF, Rtd.) is one expert who has analyzed data collected over sixty years, leading him to the conclusion that the Extraterrestrials who visit us have peaceful intentions.

The dialogue between civilizations will have to include, sooner or later, those beings and cultures that are not human, but in the "homo sapiens" category, but which clearly have a presence on our planet and a stake in the future of terrestrial and human life. This issue must be brought into the mainstream. It can no longer remain confined to fringe groups of "Spiritualists," "New Agers" or dedicated "Ufologists." Neither can it be left to the care of secretive and shadowy military organizations that are primarily devoted to expanding the power of the states they serve and, thereby, their own influence and resources. In his farewell message to the nation, President Eisenhower warned of the danger posed by the uncontrolled ambition and greed of the US (and transnational) "military-industrial complex," Being a journalist, I find the Media more responsible for the cover-up than the Military. I find that many journalists are lacking in a sacred responsibility to print the Truth, especially as it was courageously presented

by the military witnesses of Steven Greer's Disclosure Project on May 9, 2001. A moment that could have changed history was lost.

I really understood Paul Hellyer's concern that dedicated people like Dr. Steven Greer needed to be taken seriously and that the witnesses of the Disclosure Project needed to be heard, perhaps in Canada. Since I helped Steven with filming the witnesses in Italy, I realized what a huge sacrifice these people made. So I was elated when Dr. Greer went to Canada to appear with Paul Hellyer in a follow-up meeting in May 2006, five years after the Washington media event. I was hoping it would be a major media event but instead there was little media world-coverage. There are reasons for this, as Steven Greer discusses this very subject with me in his cabin in Crestone, Colorado, during CSETI training. He is, perhaps, the most powerfully articulate man any journalist will meet. In the following interview he discusses why the censorship of the most taboo subject on Earth, UFOs.

The Death of the Fourth Estate
Interview with Steven Greer
Crestone, Colorado
July 4, 2005

Paola: You said you were working on three things. What are they?

Greer: CSETI, the Ambassadors to the Universe program; the other is the Disclosure Project. We are still doing the Disclosure Project because we have a website with ten million people on it. People don't realize that the Disclosure Project video has been seen by more people than see CNN every night. I am still meeting with members of Congress within the last year, trying

to say, “Look, this information exists and it is not only related to UFOs and extraterrestrials but also to alternative energies and propulsion systems that would solve most of our problems.” So, Disclosure still has to go on and we have a Disclosure Representatives Program. We have dozens of people all over the world who host Disclosure Project screenings and meetings. So that is still going on. We would love to do Disclosure II. I have yet to understand that, after we did the Disclosure Project event in 2001, we doubled the number of military assets in terms of the number of witnesses because they came out of the closet. As a matter of fact, a retired Air Force general, who has knowledge of these covert programs, is one of them. The problem is that we do not have the funding to do it. We have got to find a source of institutional support and funding to be able to do the next level of it or it’s impossible to carry forward. There is no funding for anything serious and this is the tragedy of the whole UFO movement. It has become a carnival and caricature of itself yet we are dealing with incredibly important things and my understanding is that the intelligence community, which really does run the UFO subculture, wants to keep it that way. Now, what I’d like to do in the next year or two is do another level of disclosure, where we would bring in some of the new top-secret witnesses we have and government officials, including a former Clinton Administration official. Also in technology, where we can bring in scientists who can testify to the existence of sources of energy and propulsion systems and how they have been systematically acquired and suppressed by large transnational corporate interests. We have developed The Orion Project creating clear energy solutions to empower the 21st Century. Most people post 9/11 really don’t care if there are UFOs and ETs out there. The majority of Americans believe UFOs are real

anyway. They just don't know what to make of it. You've got to connect it to something meaningful. The fact is that it is meaningful because there are enormous implications to the secrecy and the secrecy is not because of the extraterrestrial component. The secrecy is because of the technology that would make obsolete all the oil and gas and coal power in the world.

Paola: What I am saying is that it may not be possible to do here. Maybe Canada. Did you even dream of doing Disclosure II in Canada?

Greer: Now, I am going to say something here that people hate to hear. You cannot do this without the dominant power, the only superpower in the world. We have projects in Norway and Canada. The dominant power is the American Transnational Corporate Machine. What I tell people is––geography is irrelevant!

Paola: But the Media would open it up there!

Greer: I think that what most people don't realize is that the issue we are dealing with has no geographical boundaries and hasn't had for decades.

Paola: We need the Media support, don't we?

Greer: Of course. It would have the seed funding we asked for. We could have had the initial level of the Disclosure Project in Washington, then move the whole thing to Canada, and to Rome and Switzerland and these places. There was the Chinese news media that took it seriously. You cannot ignore 110 top military, top-secret guys who are cosmonauts, brigadier generals and so on. You cannot ignore these people! And the other problem is that the major media is corrupt and is the most corrupt institution in the world.

Paola: How does this affect Disclosure?

Greer: If you were to ask me what is the largest problem with getting disclosure out and getting these technologies out to the world, it is not the White House, it is not the Congress, it is not the UN, it isn't the Parliament; it is the Media which, in democracies, was supposed to be the Fourth Estate, which means, one of the "watch dogs" of checks and balances to the other three branches of government: the judiciary, the executive and the legislative. That is where the Fourth Estate concept came from. I have a man who was on the board of AOL, Time Warner and CBS, who told me, in 1992, basically, "The Fourth Estate is dead! We have no Fourth Estate." I had a Washington Post reporter frankly tell me that nothing important will ever be published in the major media. Look at our website, where I talk about the Peter Jennings special, and you will see a link to a CIA document that was sent to me recently this year, that was dated 1991, during the first Bush presidency. It clearly describes, on page six, if I remember correctly, that there are assets that the intelligence community has at every major news media in the world, to kill, change or alter stories they want to control. The problem is the corruption of the news media and the lack of a truly free press at large. Now, the minor media is irrelevant. The major media is corporate and they are shills for the shadowy, transnational, para-governmental entity and the problem with that is that we are living in a pseudo-democracy, where the people cannot get the information. I have said seriously recently that George Soros and others need to come forward and put a billion or two into a "new" media empire. I said this should be called the Disclosure Network News. DNN instead of CNN and basically say, "OK. We need to be able to have the assets to pour this

information into the Public to educate them to what is really going on: Corporate America, or Corporate Italy or Corporate Japan."

Why is this secrecy going on? Who is sitting on the technologies and what the truth is? It is not going to happen. The major media right now are horizontally and vertically integrated with corporate interests that do not want this information out. One of the fundamental problems with the notion that we are living in a democracy without a free press, without a truly free press that is not corrupted by these secretive interests, is that it is very difficult for the masses to know what is really happening. For that reason, it makes a mockery out of Democracy. It is interesting that I'm talking about this on the 4th of July. I think that what everyone has to understand is that we have to get some seriously committed people: financially, professionally and with talent in the media, to say, "Look! We really have to do some serious exposés. For instance: this AOL executive told me that he gave some of the secret UFO Documents to Mike Wallace, of 60 Minutes TV show, the most famous investigative reporting show in the world, who wanted to do a special. Mike Wallace was considering doing something on it but they pulled the plug on it.

During the Disclosure Project event, the executive producer of *ABC News*, who was the final call guy on *Primetime Live* and *20/20*, told me he wanted to do an hour special involving these top-secret witnesses. A few weeks later I called him on that and I asked, "What are you doing on that?" and he said, "Well they won't let me do it!" "Who are they?" He replied, "Dr. Greer, you know who they are!"

I have seen this up close and personal with the world's media, not just with the US media. I have seen it with the *BBC* in

England and other countries. The inability for even people who are highly placed within the news media to be unable to be allowed by their corporate masters to tell the truth is appalling. So, since we do not have a truly free media, the Fourth Estate has been assassinated essentially. You have a mockery of democracy because that is the “Checks and Balance” system that is no longer there.

The Bentwaters UFO Case: Testimony of Steven Robert LaPlume

The Bentwaters case (www.therendleshamforestincident.com) is very fascinating. As destiny would have it, I actually heard from both a participant and a witness who were on the Bentwaters Base in England at the time. Steve LaPlume, who now lives in China, heard me on the Coast to Coast show with George Noory, in 2005. He contacted me immediately and trusted me with the following testimony:

"I, Steven Robert LaPlume, on this third day of February 2005, wish to declare the following as true regarding the events on and at RAF Bentwaters from December 26, 1980 to January 30, 1981.

"I witnessed members from another flight entering the day room at about 10:00 a.m., three hours after their shift ended. They were very distraught when asked about their encounter with a UFO the shift before.

"Also, Larry Warren related to me the events of a few nights, which entailed the sighting of a UFO, the fact that the lights were not working properly and also that he witnessed a craft, three beings, and a Colonel communicating with the beings. He also mentioned that there was film documentation and that parts were flown in from Germany to help fix the downed craft. This was in early January of 1981.

"I had a subsequent sighting which brought out a mass of high-ranking officials, one of which brought his wife and teenaged son to: 'Hopefully get to see one this time!' [Quote by the Lt. Colonel's wife.] The base commander, Colonel Gordon Williams, (promoted by Congress the day before to General), was also present and I advised him my post was then 'safe and secure,' as instructed by

my shift commander, Lt. Englund.

"After Larry Warren came up missing for a few days and told me of his "interrogation procedure" and I confirmed I was being followed by still-unknown (to me) agents, I felt it in my best interest to trash my career, lose face with my father, a military man since World War II, and leave the base and the US Air Force for my own personal safety. I felt so strongly of this, I faked a suicide attempt and cut open my own stomach to prove my point and receive a discharge, which I did. I have no regrets over this action.

"My personal thoughts are that if there was something, it was a threat to the ordinance we housed at the base. If there was nothing, then there was mass hysteria and the entire squadron of Security Police was mentally unfit to be in the position of responsibility we were charged with. If there was nothing, then why would the Assistant Base Commander of Woodbridge bring his family out to take pictures of a UFO, if there was nothing there to begin with? And why would a recently-promoted General Williams get out of bed at midnight to come investigate as well?"

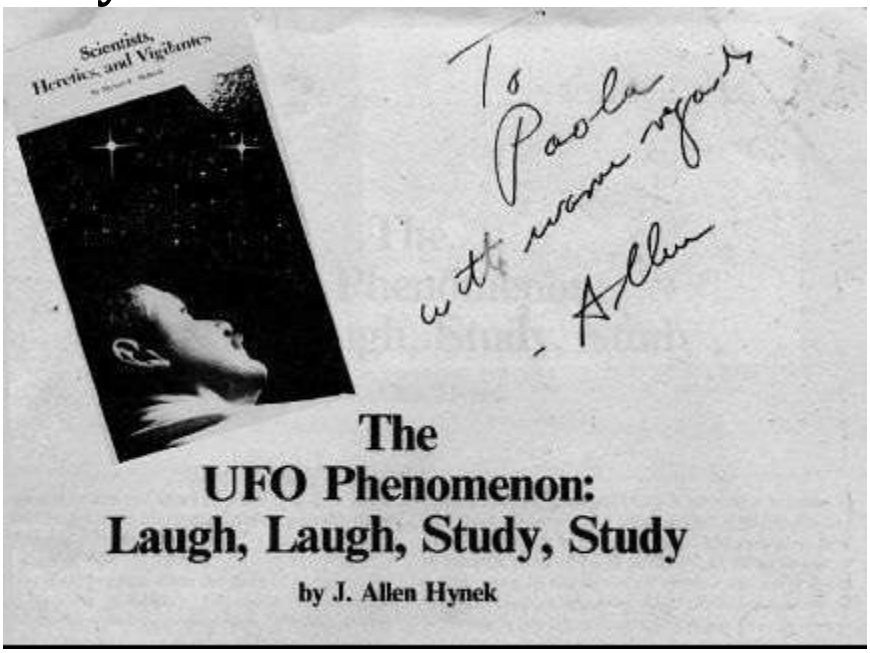
--Steven Robert LaPlume
Airman First Class assigned to the 81st Security Police Squadron
November 4, 1980 – April 10, 1981

Pictured: Steven Robert LaPlume

This is powerful testimony from a first-hand witness and that is the only testimony I usually consider valid, so when people always ask me if "I believe in UFOs," I say it is not a matter of belief. People see them. There is hard evidence. I cannot ignore this testimony or any testimony given to me by military or ex-military witnesses. I have been lucky that I have been able to speak to people, like Sgt. Clifford Stone at his home, informally on several occasions; that they trust me to give an accurate account of their disclosure testimony.

The Hynek Method of Research: Laugh, Laugh,

Study, Study



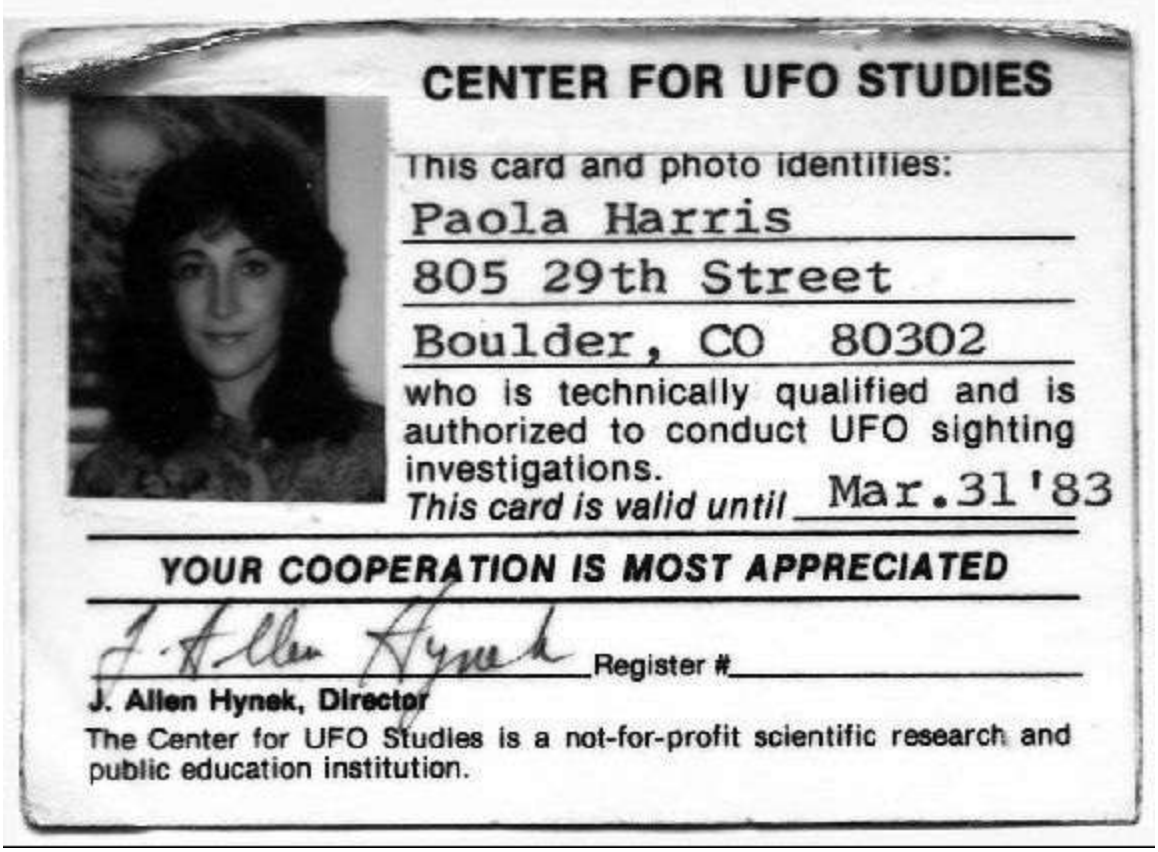
I never knew how much he really knew from what he told us, his friends. He probably knew more than he could say but he would never raise his voice. He once autographed for me a paper he wrote called *The UFO Phenomena: Laugh Laugh, Study Study.* Little did he know I would do this and remain a great fan of his. J. Allen Hynek was my true inspiration. He would never attack his detractors in public. He would never make harsh judgments. He would never give you a final decision. Allen, as we called him, was a true "gentleman." He would listen to all our ideas. It always amazes me how those, who never personally knew J. Allen Hynek, attempt to write about him. He was forever embarrassed by the *"swamp gas"* hypothesis.

No! He did not always represent the official party line Ufology, but I found him extremely progressive. If he wanted to represent national "party line Ufology;" Hynek would have remained with *Blue Book* and the United States Air Force study. He received much criticism in his life for his hesitation to cross

to the other side. But, then he had five mouths to feed and a brilliant astronomy career as a professor to think about. For all our adoration of science and scientists, we know few who can really risk their funding to *tell the world the truth*. It is they who keep the secret and maintain the status quo.

It is useless to portray science as legitimizing Ufology and Allen would tell you that. He was an uncommon scientist, as it was he who told me that the UFO realty was filled with paranormal phenomena and that I needed to reconsider that fact in my final assessment. In the beginning, I didn't agree, as I was a "nuts and bolts" researcher. I now admit that it scared me and it was not until later that I realized that this element, *the paranormal factor*, is the one that drives scientists crazy. They cannot measure this dimension in any laboratory.

My life with Allen Hynek began when I walked into the CUFOS offices in Evanston, Illinois, in 1981, and asked if I could see how he organized the files, files that he considered anomalies from his *"Blue Book"* days.



CENTER FOR UFO STUDIES

This card and photo identifies:

Paola Harris

805 29th Street

Boulder, CO 80302

who is technically qualified and is authorized to conduct UFO sighting investigations.

This card is valid until Mar.31'83

YOUR COOPERATION IS MOST APPRECIATED

J. Allen Hynek Register #

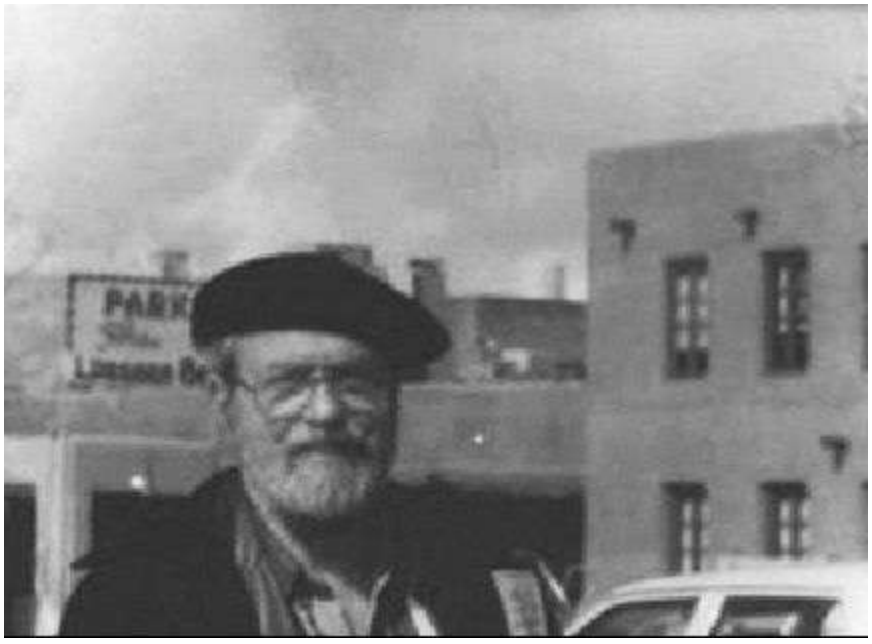
J. Allen Hynek, Director

The Center for UFO Studies is a not-for-profit scientific research and public education institution.

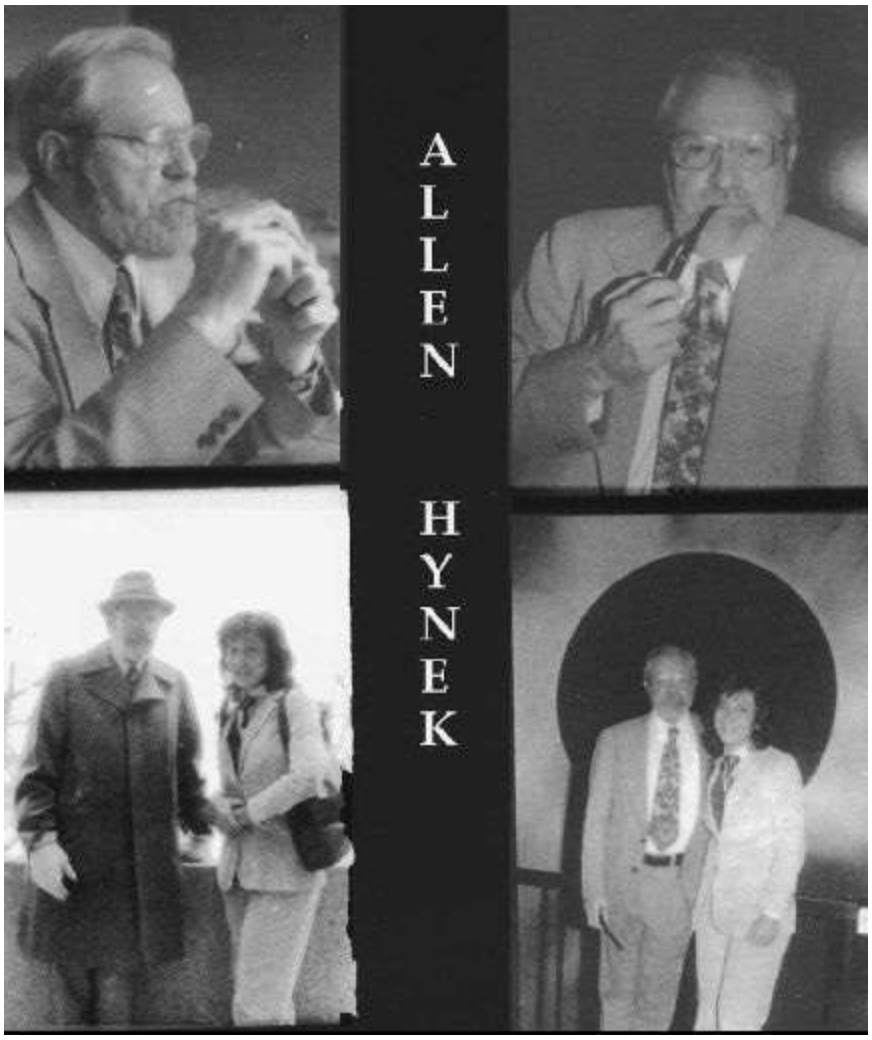
He quickly gave me a guided tour, asked if I wanted to be trained as an investigator and asked if I could translate all the Italian sightings. Within a month, he bought me a typewriter and sent boxes of files to my Boulder, Colorado house. He would visit often and bring Mimi and sometimes guests. One time he brought Jenny Randles and we spoke about the Bentwaters case over dinner. Many times we would talk into the night about the obstacles he had to overcome and the resentment of other investigators, who thought he came on board too late. He really loved to network with people and, having the same astrological sign, so do I. He traveled all around the world and was very loved and respected. I was trained first in Chicago, as a Field Investigator, and I had a CUFOS identification card. I was privileged enough to be very close to his private secretary, Estelle Postol. She was amazing,

as she knew him well and helped enormously in the office. We worked closely when I would fly into Chicago, or rather Evanston, to be trained as an investigator but like all of us then, we were looking for the real privileged information.

Pictured: Paola Harris and Estelle Postol, at the CUFOS office in Evanston, Illinois.

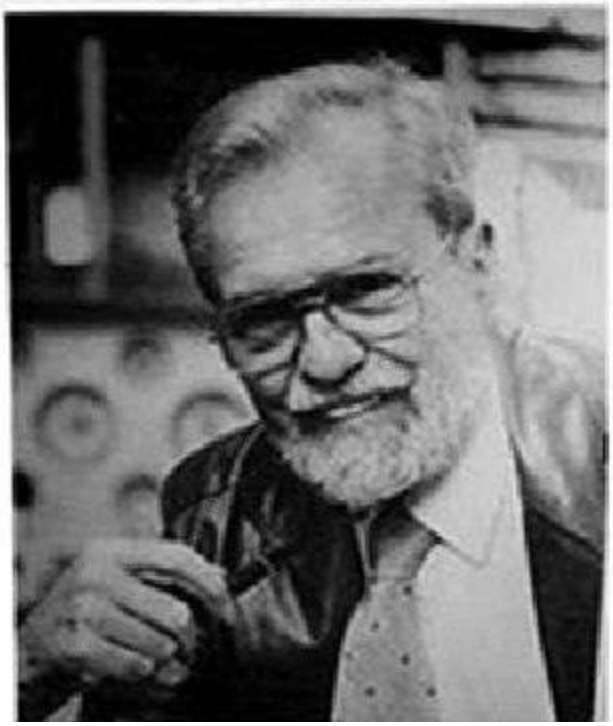


Pictured: J. Allen Hynek, Santa Fe, New Mexico.



Pictured: Paola Harris with J. Allen Hynek at NCAR, Boulder, Colorado, 1982.

Allen Hynek was a renegade and a free thinker and we were both Taurus with Sagittarius risings. He came in with Halley's comet and exited with it in 1986. I knew him and his wife Mimi very well, as they were my dear friends when I lived in Boulder, Colorado, in the 1980s. One year we went on vacation together in Santa Fe, New Mexico, and I took some fine portraits of them but I think I had a sense of history about this meeting as Allen died some time later and that vacation was a "gift" in our communal experience. I remember dancing the Tango with him, while my companion, Russ, danced with Mimi. Allen was a fine dancer and a fine gentleman.



Photos: Mimi and Allen Hynek, Santa Fe, NM

The “in-fighting” among UFO researchers continues and it seems impossible, in this world of jealousies and envy and personal aggrandizement, to work together. So much so that Colonel Philip Corso once said that “the Government does not

need debunkers and disinformation techniques, since the Ufologists fight among themselves and do it well." He told me that the lack of cooperation and hash judgments would delay the disclosure for who-knows-how-long, to the government's amusement.

Allen Hynek would be sad today to see this because a united front brings strength. In the letter below, we see Allen interested in the Bentwaters case and his mention of James McDonald, a scientist and early pioneer in the field of UFO investigations. So I have organized this around Bentwaters, UK, UFO landing, 1980, with the courageous statement sent to me by a first-hand witness, Steven Robert La Plume, who was there. Dr. Hynek did his own investigation, as we see from these declassified letters from the *Blue Book* archives.

Dr. Hynek's Inquiry into the Bentwaters Case

It is through the work of this great pioneer and personal friend that this subject came to the surface. Here are some declassified letters from the great astronomer-researcher J. Allen Hynek, which cover a variety of events.

Letter from Capt. Gregory to J. Allen Hynek, November 26, 1956

Box 9703
1125th FAG (ATIC)
Wright-Patterson AFB
Ohio

November 26, 1956
Dr. J. Allen Hynek
Smithsonian Astrophysical Observatory

60 Street
Cambridge 38, Massachusetts

Dear Dr. Hynek:

Reference is made to my letter of November 20, 1956, in which I stated that I would send you the finalized material on the UFO case. Enclosed you will find AF 112 on the final investigations regarding this sighting. I am relieved to find that they carry it under an 'unclassified' category. This, of course, helps us in both the discussion and transmittal aspects.

I have included a rough plot of the three radars and one visual observation of the sightings. This should be of some help for your review and comment. These sightings, in my opinion, cannot be considered concurrent with respect to time. The separate report of each observer indicates three widely divergent tracks. An attempted intercept by American airplanes, which lasted for 45 minutes, produced no physical evidence of any UFO in the area. The visual observation leads me to believe that the observer was seeing Mars. Also, there appears to have been some contact (I do not wish to use the word 'collusion') between the operators of two radar stations, since they both state speed of exactly 4000 m.p.h.

I feel, therefore, that our original analyses of anomalous propagation and astronomical is more or less correct. I will consider this case closed upon receipt of your final comment, at which time I will make a compiled, final conclusion for the Air Force.

A word concerning your proposed visit. As things are now it seems improbable that any plans can be made before the beginning of January.

--Sincerely,
s/s Capt. Gregory

Blue Book Memorandum by Dr. J. Allen Hynek
Oct 17, 1956, T56-24219

Classified CONFIDENTIAL, changed to UNCLASSIFIED, effective March 15, 1968, under the authority of AFR 205-1, para 2-176 (ii), by Major Hector Quintanilla Jr.

MEMORANDUM FOR RECORD
SUBJECT: (C) Evaluation of Lakenheath Reports

The original Lakenheath reports and the preliminary evaluations made by ATIC were submitted to the undersigned for examination, evaluation and comment. Writer requested permission to discuss these with Dr. F.L.Whipple, Harvard University, and director of the Smithsonian Astrophysical Observatory, in view of the fact that the sightings occurred at the time of Perseid meteors and Dr. Whipple is a world-recognized authority on meteors. Following comments will accordingly be invited to cover the three points separately.

It is to be regretted that so unusual a sighting report did not contain more factual material on which to base an evaluation. The Lakenheath report is one of the more unusual reports, involving electronic and visual observations and subsequent pursuit by fighter plane. Yet, report does not state whether it was definitely established that visual and electronic sightings referred to same object, or even if they occurred precisely simultaneously. Further, report does not give exact weather information, which might enable one to charge weather conditions with any precision relative to "anomalous propagation," such as frequently occurs with radars.

It would be of extreme value to have independent statements

from the various observers, both at Bentwaters and Lakenheath. Report states that observers were traffic controllers and intelligence specialists. An analyst would be greatly aided by having independent statements from such highly trained observers, as the original report indicates the observers were.

The implication of the original report is that the objects were sighted simultaneously by ground-visual, air-electronic and ground-electronic means. Yet, report nowhere states stellar magnitude of visual sightings or nature of radar blips. Angular rate of motion of objects is likewise not included.

With the above in mind, the preliminary report submitted by Capt. Gregory covers the case as well as it possibly could under the circumstances. The present writer, upon more detailed examination of the report, and accepting the implications of the original report in the absence of specific statements, is led to differ somewhat from preliminary report. It seems highly unlikely, for instance, that the Perseid meteors could have been the cause of the sightings, especially in view of the statement of observers that shooting stars were exceptionally numerous that evening, thus implying that they were able to distinguish the two phenomena. Further, if now any credence can be given to the maneuver of the objects as sighted visually and by radar, the meteor hypothesis must be ruled out.

Meteors, however, as pointed out by Capt. Gregory, can lead to radar returns because of the ionization of the gases in their trail. Accordingly it would be extremely important to know whether the Bentwaters and Lakenheath radars have ever, in the past, observed meteors on their scopes and, if so, how such returns differ from the blips reported.

Dr. Whipple and the writer discussed the Lakenheath incident at length and Dr. Whipple pointed out immediately the

statement “radars reported these facts to occur at later hours than the ground observers.” This statement needs clarification, inasmuch as it contradicts other portions of the report, which indicate that, at least at certain times, visual and radar sightings were simultaneous.

Dr. Whipple stated that, as far as the report at hand is concerned, no obvious physical solution is suggested. He deplored the inadequacy of the typical UFO report as a scientific document. He further stated that the nature of such reports is not likely to change and urged that if the Air Force is serious in its attempts to resolve this problem, both scientifically and in the public mind, that the Air Force does more than continue its passive investigational attitudes. He suggested that, as in any scientific procedure, facts are the raw material from which one must work and that; in general, the investigator in any particular case must assume an active role in the obtaining of scientific data. In short, Dr. Whipple asked the writer whether the Air Force had ever considered, or was now considering, the possibility of initiating, for a limited time, an actual sky patrol by photographic and visual means of precisely those areas from which the maximum UFO reports originate. The writer responded that this had indeed been suggested in the past but that because of considerations of expenses and of possible public misinterpretation, it was abandoned.

Dr. Whipple urged that a more modest proposal of the same general type be considered at this time. For instance, an area from which numerous reports have come in might be patrolled by a dozen or so “fish-eye” cameras, operating automatically, which would give a total record of all bright moving objects at night within a given area or sector. A simple timing device would suffice to yield the angular rate of objects in motion so

that fireballs (bright meteors) could be distinguished from airplanes and from other astronomical objects.

The present writer submits that it might be of considerable potential use to the Air Force to be able to state, at some future time, that a careful patrol of an area "rich in UFO reports" had been accomplished and nothing of a mysterious character photographed. This would be especially true if, during the time of the patrol, UFO reports from untrained observers continued to come in from that area.

--s/s J. Allen Hynek
Dr. J. Allen Hynek
Smithsonian Astrophysical Observatory
USAF UFO Scientist-Consultant
October 17, 1956

Letter from Dr. J. Allen Hynek to Dr. James E. McDonald
September 11, 1970

Dr. James McDonald
Department of Atmospheric Sciences
The University of Arizona
Tucson, Arizona 85721

Dear Jim,

I have been going over your Lakenheath article in FSR. I have gotten out my files on the case and, incidentally, if you are still interested in the names that were razor-bladed out of your copy, the A/2c was John L.Vaccars, Jr. [sic] and the Technical Sergeant was Elmer L. Whenry. The names of the two interceptor pilots were First Lieutenant Charles V. Metz and First Lieutenant Andrew C. Rowe. Incidentally, also, I personally dismissed the meteor hypothesis immediately, as is

pointed out in the Condon Report, page 255 of the Bantam edition.

However, all-that aside, maybe you have some information that I don't have about the case, namely the thing that would tie down the passage of an object from east to the west, directly over Bentwaters, simultaneously visually by the tower operators and by the pilot overhead at 4,000 feet. In the letter to Condon, all we have is a third-hand statement. The writer states, "He said the tower reported seeing it go by…" So the writer is telling us that he heard from somebody else that the tower operator told him.

Now the Bentwaters report, which covers the period 2120 to 2220, says nothing about an object passing directly overhead, although Vaccars indicates that at 2130, for a period of 30 seconds, he saw something go from 25 to 30 miles east-southeast of Bentwaters and fly on a constant course of 295 degrees to 15 to 20 miles west-northwest of Bentwaters. This could indicate that it passed overhead, but nothing is said of the object disappearing from the scope which would mean that it did not pass directly overhead, for it would have disappeared for a short time if that were the case.

The Lakenheath Report states that at 2255, Bentwaters sighted an object 30-miles east of station and that this object did disappear 2- miles east of station and then appeared 3 miles west of station. Now comes the catch: "Tower personnel at Bentwaters reported to GCA that a bright light passed over the field east to west at terrific speeds and at about 4,000 feet altitude." But at no place is it indicated that this was at 2255. The next paragraph goes on: "At the same time, pilot and aircraft at 4,000 feet . . ." That "at the same time" seems to me to refer not to 2255 but to the time the Tower personnel reported the bright light passing over the field.

Have you in any way been able to establish that the radar and visual sightings were indeed simultaneous? This would be a most important point in this whole thing and I, indeed, hope that you can. Nothing in my records, however, really pins this down.

I wonder whether the 2255 might in itself be in error? It seems that with all the things going on at Bentwaters from 2120 to 2220, that Lakenheath would certainly have been alerted earlier than 2255. Yet, the letter to Condon indicates that Lakenheath was not alerted until they had sighted the target going directly over them. Two points: why would have Bentwaters waited so long to alert Lakenheath and secondly, why is not the 2255 observation (if it is real) appearing in the report from Captain Holt and approved by Major Bixel? In that report it is stated, "Most significant are the reports of three sources of UFO beams tracked on the Bentwaters GCA radar." It seems to me that it would have been much more significant to have reported the simultaneous visual radar sighting because a visual object swooping by at low altitude and observed from the ground and from, and below, an aircraft, and simultaneously tracked on radar would have been far more significant than the radar alone sightings between 2120 and 2220. What do you think?

If the 2255 should, indeed, be 2155, it would tie in with the first period of Bentwaters sightings (if there were two periods) but why, in this case, would not Captain Holt have mentioned it?

Any light that you can shed on this most important case would be appreciated.

I am pleased that you did mention in your article, my memorandum, which strongly urged "that further information on the technical aspects of the original observation be obtained,

without loss of time…" Needless to say, nothing whatever was done and you would have had to know Captain Gregory… (his one and only aim in life was to become Major) and he certainly was not going to do anything whatever to go against the Pentagon, which had been told in no uncertain terms by the Robertson Panel that there was nothing to the whole subject. But then, you never have understood this and probably never will. Or perhaps you are beginning to understand somewhat as you note that your serious, strong, and I might say even emotional, attempts to have the military and the scientific establishment take the subject seriously, have not exactly met with outstanding success. And yet the climate for acceptance today is, in my opinion, an order of magnitude more favorable.

One thing I will always have to thank you for and that is the day you came to my office and pounded the desk and said, "Allen, how could you sit on this data for 18 years and not let us know about it?" It was like a revelation to me. Here, at last, was finally one real scientist who was taking the subject seriously! Up to that point, I was becoming obsessed with the idea that "everybody was out of step but Johnny" and it was a great spiritual uplift to find, at long last, another scientist seriously looking at it. I will freely admit that I originally approached the subject very skeptically for the first decade or so, largely because, as you well know, Blue Book data were so abysmally poor and no attempt was ever made to upgrade them, even when I repeatedly suggested this. So, despite your criticisms, I do have much to thank you for and I hope we may work together productively in the future.

--Sincerely yours
s/s J. Allen Hynek
Director
JAH/al CC: Charles Bowen

Interview with Betsy McDonald, Wife of Dr. James McDonald

I thank Mrs. McDonald for this interview for, in light of her husband's suicide, I came to know his courage through her. Allen Hynek also respected him and this exchange shows the caliber of scientists interested in a serious study of this phenomena. But, they are not all scientists, as we will see in the next interviews. They are people who are aware; awake on a cosmic level. There are so many men, women and children involved on a planetary level.

Having lived in Rome, Italy, for fourteen years, I am witness to this. I have spoken in Rome and Torino in Italy; in Marseilles and Argelles sur Mer in France; in Locarno and Lugano in Switzerland; in Düsseldorf, Germany; in Lincolnshire and Blackpool in England. Intelligent people the world over are asking the same obvious questions. It is amazing how much of the UFO literature they read and how many Internet sites carry information. My website is translated into Italian, German, French, English and Spanish [www.paolaharris.com].

Interview with Betsy McDonald
Wife of Dr. James McDonald, Early Pioneer in UFO Research
X-Conference , Washington, D.C.
April 23, 2005

"*He did say that if UFOs were hostile, it would maybe unite people around the world as human beings, rather than fighting one another. UFOs should be studied."* ––Betsy McDonald

Pictured: Betsy McDonald and Paola Harris, 2005.

Paola: Did you know Dr. J. Allen Hynek?

McDonald: No. I never met him.

Paola: Did your husband ever talk about him?

McDonald: Oh yes. I remember when Mac first met him and the fact that Hynek was not as open as Mac thought he should be. He told him that he shouldn't be afraid.

Paola: Did he think it was fear?

McDonald: I remember it was fear. Hynek had a daughter in college and he was worried that he had to put her through college and he thought his work would have some repercussions. Mac told him not to worry and that he should not be afraid.

Paola: Was your husband upset with the Condon report?

McDonald: Oh yes, definitely.

Paola: Did he demonstrate that at home?

McDonald: Oh yes. I sort of remember there was a memo by a person [named] Lore, which proved that Condon had basically agreed to debunk UFOs.

Paola: Who was the memo by again?

McDonald: You know, when the Government was going to be giving a grant of, I think, a half a million dollars for the investigation of UFOs, I remember saying to Mac, "Well, you are the most prominent person doing work on UFOs. It should go to you!" Instead, it went to Condon. I told him, "This is what happens to you. Every time you do the work, then somebody else gets the money."

Paola: Well, he was doing honest work, Betsy. Was he afraid? Did he ever come home saying, "This is making me nervous"?

McDonald: No! He thought it should all be open and above board. It was a scientific question. That was his point. That was his mission in a sense, I think, as far as UFOs are concerned. He wanted to make it a scientific question that should be taken up by science. As a matter of fact, he tried to get the National Science Foundation to take it up. He didn't succeed in that.

Paola: What was the reason they gave him that they wouldn't take it up?

McDonald: I don't recall the details. Basically that was his ideal. He went around to meteorological societies, engineering societies and other scientific bodies. He was trying to show that this should be considered a scientific question.

Paola: It is a scientific question. He thought that there should be observation posts created around the world for sightings, right?

McDonald: For sightings.

Paola: What was his title? He was a physicist?

McDonald: His title was that he was a senior scientist at the Institute for Atmospheric Physics. He came to the University of Arizona to found the Institute of Atmospheric Physics, but he was not the administrative type. He was a researcher.

Pictured: Dr. James McDonald. Photo courtesy Betsy McDonald.

Paola: That is very interesting. He was a courageous man. Did

he know he was going to be a hero when he was working at this? That he was working against the grain?

McDonald: My husband was naive about this. He was idealistic. People had been talking about the conspiracy. I often think of his philosophy as the "philosophy of the enlightenment." In the early days in Capitalism, everyone was optimistic about the Ideal. If you tell the truth, they will accept it and work on it.

Paola: So he had the idea that if we tell the truth then they would work on it. So he was, basically, into Truth!

McDonald: Right. That's the way he was!

Paola: So he never saw this as a matter of National Security, that these vehicles were so advanced that they could pose a threat to the United States? He never saw that?

McDonald: No. He did say, when he spent a lot of time in UFO research and it was separate from his job, that if they were hostile it would maybe unite people around the world as human beings, rather than fighting one another.

Paola: Then we would have a common enemy? Did he think they were hostile?

McDonald: No! He did not say that. What he said was: "They should be studied."

Paola: Did he leave materials behind? Did he want to write any books on UFOs?

McDonald: No, he made speeches and wrote articles.

Paola: Who are some of the people he admired most in the field?

McDonald: I don't know. He worked in NICAP a lot. He liked Dick Hall. He admired Bob Wood. He was with McDonald

Douglas, you know. There were not too many people in the field then.

Paola: What years are we talking here?

McDonald: He died in 1971, so it was the late 1960s––early 1970s when he did his work. He did a lot of cases. He had gone to Project Blue Book when Project Blue Book closed. He stayed there a day or two and picked out about a hundred cases that he thought would be the best to study, with radar, multiple witnesses and so forth. So he had some cases when he died and there wasn't really anybody to do them. The only person that I gave the copies to was in Australia but I never heard from him again. He was a scientist, because Mac was counting on science to do it.

Paola: I hesitate to touch the question of your husband's death because everybody has about a hundred questions around it. Do you have any particular feeling about that?

McDonald: Well, it was a complicated thing. He had been suicidal before…before he studied UFOs, so that was in his makeup.

Paola: He was very intelligent. A lot of people who have a certain intelligence are very sensitive.

McDonald: I would say he was accomplished. Ann Druffel wrote about him extensively in the book *Firestorm*, by Granite Publishing.

Paola: In his lifetime, were the people he worked with sincere, like him?

McDonald: Well, they are politicians! There was an interest, I think. At times, more came out than comes out now, from what I hear at this conference (X-Conference, April 2005). More was

published then.

Paola: More came out but the public was misinformed. Today, the public is informed but the government is not coming out anymore. If they came out, they would just have to admit it; so let's not play any more games, because the public is informed now. So if they had something to come out with, it would just be the admission. It would be nothing else; the admission that we have the evidence.

McDonald: Probably, but my husband was an independent scientist who was not tied in with any of the business interests or corporations or outside interests, which influence people today. It was an earlier time. He still had to get grants. He got a Navy grant. He had been in the Navy. He lost that grant doing UFO work. He lost when he went to Australia and it was made public. The Grant was dropped in the late sixties, when the Australian newspapers reported that he was discussing UFOs with Australians.

Paola: So he suffered financially because of this, too? Did he ever have a sighting himself, ever?

McDonald: No! He would have told me.

Paola: Have you ever had a sighting?

McDonald: No

Paola: So his interest purely comes from scientific curiosity?

McDonald: A lot of people that he respected had, and they would tell him that they had, sightings. They came to him because he was very open and people would come to him and tell him. That is when he became interested.

Paola: If you had to tell the world something about your husband, James––you called him Mac––what would you tell

them that, if he were standing here, he would want you to tell them?

McDonald: He was a scientist. He was idealistic and is a person of great honesty; of great integrity and great energy. He was like Don Quixote because, in a sense, he did not understand the nature of this government cover-up. He idealized it. He worked with people that were within the government. He considered it the responsibility of the scientists to look for the answers.

Paola: Thank you, Betsy. You are very kind to talk to us!

Interview with Colonel Philip Corso

We, here in Rome, knew Colonel Corso very well. He spoke in Pescara, on the Adriatic Coast, in 1997 and at the World Symposium in San Marino in 1998. Those present were impressed with his credentials, his honesty and his testimony. He used to ask his skeptics, "Were you there?"

Before I begin to defend Colonel Philip Corso, I want to ask the following questions: Why has this man been the object of such controversy? Why debunk the dead, who cannot defend themselves? Why go on with this debate, unless it is fueled by economic reasons, since the commonality seems to be the selling of *Roswell* books? Why put so much energy into this, unless there are ulterior motives? It does not take a genius to figure out that the motives of these debunkers may not be the most "noble." Some of the arguments are ridiculous. We researchers do not base veracity only on documents, especially when dealing with the *"Black Ops"* world or with people who had high intelligence positions. At times there is no paper trail! We all know this. So why allow people who never questioned Colonel Corso themselves nor knew him, to have the final word on his character? I have spoken to these major researchers (along with Bob and Ryan Wood, who have recently cited *The Dawn of a New Age* Corso manuscript, published in Italian, as a viable resource. Note: Americans can now read this document on OpenMinds TV website, www.openminds.tv). They are all puzzled as to why the Corso "bashing." Corso was very credible; he knew the situation and, at 83-years old, decided to come forward with major disclosure testimony. Corso's motivation was his three grandsons asking for the truth and his belief that it was "time" to tell his story, but only after the death

of General Trudeau, as agreed. Colonel Corso told me, as well as his family, that he thought that humanity could handle the truth. We know that many inconsistencies in the book could also be attributed to his co-writer but the core story is true.

Pictured: Paola Harris, Colonel Philip Corso and Maurizio Baiata at press conference.

Why do these debunkers criticize former Minister of Defense, Paul Hellyer, for citing the credibility of the Corso book? We know that, besides calling that "four-star General" to verify Corso's role in Army R&D, the Honorable Paul Hellyer must have known "something" of this matter in the National Security discussions which were obviously part of his position in the Canadian government. So why are these few people still fueling this Corso controversy? Why not speak to the researchers above; most very experienced in their field, and interview the people who knew him well?

His real story, I find, was told mostly in Italy, where he was on Prime Time television talk shows and an honored guest at two conferences. I accompanied him there and spent a week at Easter 1998 with the Colonel and his daughter-in law Liz and his grandsons Andrew and Philip. We had some very revealing conversations. He would talk about conversations he had with

Canadian scientist Wilber Smith, and what he called his "German Scientists." These men came from Operation Paperclip, which was launched by the U.S. Government to bring German scientists to the USA in the interest of National Security. Some of them: Wernher von Braun, the "father" of the U.S. space exploration program; Siegfried Knemeyer, the former head of the RLM (Ministry of Aeronautics); Hans Amtmann; Alexander Lippisch; Robert Sarbacher; and others, seem to have been in possession of critical knowledge in the field of aeronautics, space flight and UFO technologies. They came to America in 1946. Some of them worked at Air Material Command (AMC) at Wright Field (later Wright-Patterson) in Ohio. The Colonel had been to the base at Wright Field. At one point, in an informal conversation with us in Italy, he said he had seen craft there.

Corso himself says it all in the handwritten notes of his manuscript called *The Dawn of a New Age*. It is a tragedy that it has not been published in English as we have it for sale in Italian in all the bookstores. He says, why not invest the time in a "new" scientific approach that takes us past the paper-pushing and laboratory-experimentation stages and leads us, instead, into a serious discipline, which could include adaptation to inter-dimensional phenomena. He said the answer was in time travel and understanding the mystery of space and time.

Some back-engineering projects, according to NSC's (National Security Council and at one time the special assistant to General Trudeau, head of the Pentagon's Foreign Technology Desk) Colonel Philip Corso and others, includes special materials (ceramics, alloys, bio-textiles), lasers, fiber-optics, solid-state electronics, compact discs, supercomputers, biotronic and bio-computer devices, magneto-aero and hydro-

dynamics, magneto-gravitation, particle beam weapons, electromagnetic pulse (EMP) engines, stealth technology, night-vision technology, cold fusion, neutronic reactors, etc.

Exclusive Interview with Colonel Philip Corso
Given to Paola Harris and Maurizio Baiata
Rome, Italy
1998

"Give this information to the young people of the world and this country. They want to hear it." ––Colonel Phillip Corso

Here is an unedited, original interview that Colonel Corso gave to Editor Maurizio Baiata and me, in 1998, in a hotel in Rome. I remember it well!

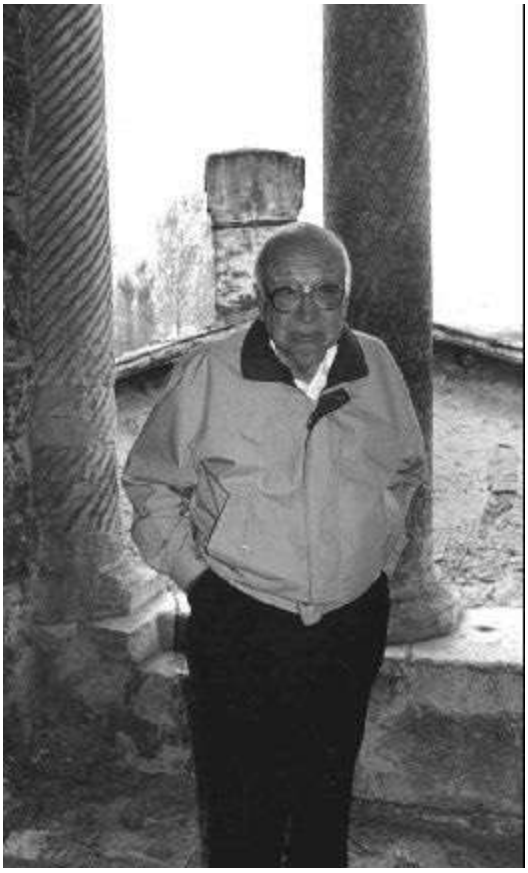
Corso: I've just mentioned crop circles, mutilations of animals and abductions of humans. When I was Chief of the Foreign Technology Division, I went to the General one day and it was agreed that we would start no projects in the Army, in our organization, on those three items: crop circles, mutilations and abductions, but we would watch them. We would keep getting the reports and we would watch them because our main objective in those days was weapons of war. We did it to advance the competitive edge of the Army. Even with the beings, it did not matter to us if they were real or not and it didn't matter if they came by accident or design. Our motive was: if they are real, we are going to be ready. We are not going to sit here like stupid humans and say they are not around. We have to work on the assumptions that they are there and they might be enemies. So I told the General, our main thrust must be that, and I hardly had time to do what I'm doing but I would read the documents, because I could read documents in a

minute or so. I said: “I’ll keep getting these reports and watch this but we’ll do nothing about it, only collect information,” and for years I collected documents, at the White House, which talked about mutilations. We knew about them. We made the decision that crop circles were nothing else but integrated circuits. When we’d put in an integrated circuit they’d give us a message. Abductions, we came to the conclusion they’re happening but that we were not going to do anything about it. We were receiving materials so I did get two of the implants. There are other implants that I’ve never talked about, which we knew were real. You could not take them in your hand because they were microscopic, but they were there.

So the future has to go along those lines. When I was working in this field, I know they were real. They happened. I don’t think that any other of those people can say this. They weren’t cleared. They didn’t get the reports. They did not have access to them.

They talk to an abductee and what happens? The critic says, ‘hallucination, self hypnotism’ and you’re finished. How are you going to get past that? Well, if I tell you that the abductee had two implants, it makes it real. You can say, “Colonel Corso told me.” It was an area that we never did anything about. We never found out the reason for it because we had our hands full with what we were doing. That wasn’t my job to do that. We spent money on the night-viewing device; millions of dollars. That was a product of war. The soldiers of Vietnam could see the enemy at night. Lasers, Fiber Optics was the main thrust of our organization. The extraterrestrial himself; I would always say, was the greatest gift they gave us and we did nothing with it. So who was in charge? I was, so that meant I did nothing with it. So in my old age maybe I feel guilty and I have been writing about it now. I realized experts have to come into this and look at this

entity, this Being. I know nothing about lungs, the lymphatic system and the body. This Being is, after all, a biological entity. All these stories of clones; that it is against religion; that man wants to live forever, that's all baloney. That clone was made for another purpose: to travel in space. They want to see what space is like. They came here. Without the relationship of the clone with the flying saucer, they never would have made it here.



Pictured: Colonel Philip Corso, Rome, Italy, 1998.

Paola: Will they attack us?
Corso: There's no way in the world that I can tell you that they won't attack us but, from a soldier's point of view, I've got to be ready for any attack that might come. If I'm not, I'm negligent and I shouldn't be dressed in a military uniform. You have got to be ready for any eventuality or you'll be destroyed and your

country will go with it. If they fight a war we need to realize that their super-intellect is on a different level and I don't think they would fight on our level, with bombs and cannons. Why should they? They could not carry enough bombs and cannons on their space ships to fight us. They might fight us with our bodies, with something that uses no weight, like a type of biological weapon. I think that the super-intellect will fight us on that level. Using bombs and guns is like fighting barbarians. The problem is; those people that think that the scenario is like this are thinking like human beings and not like the aliens. One example is a mistake I made: I had a pen-like artifact I received from the Roswell Crash and it would not go on and I thought the battery was dead so I put it away. See how stupid that was? As if a "Super Race" would use a battery that would wear out in two months! That is ridiculous thinking and yet it happened to me. I am telling you what the British taught me in Intelligence, years ago. Yes, you look for targets and things like that but the main things you look for are "intentions." They were right. You defeat the enemy by knowing his intentions, not by one bomb. It took me guesswork to build up the mosaic because I have to think in my own brain, 'What is his intention?' Naturally I'm going to make mistakes because I don't know too much about him, but at least I can try. Whereas this new science could fill in and correct the mistakes I made because of lack of knowledge. And this is what I think it has to come to. I've really never talked like this to anybody, well, maybe with a couple of scientist friends, but usually I don't. My scientist friends are calling me and you know why they are calling me? Because in the book I stated that this extraterrestrial is part of the flying saucer. It is all one. So these are another intelligence. They are ahead of us. They have proven it. One simple reason: they can fly in space and we can't. In the end, the greatest gift was the

extraterrestrial, not the hardware.

--Colonel Philip Corso, on Videotape, 1998, Rome, Italy

Pictured: Paola Harris and Colonel Corso.

The Perspective of Monsignor Corrado Balducci, Vatican Representative

Monsignor Corrado Balducci was a close friend; he has since passed on. We spent many hours together discussing current UFO research. Because of our close proximity (living near St. Peter's) in Rome and because we admired each other, we often dined together. Padre Balducci was a pure spirit, whose eyes lit up when discussing extraterrestrial visitations. He was curious, educated and open-minded. He was optimistic and hopeful that we would have some kind of celestial "intervention" and be saved from cataclysmic destruction. He saw these visitors as "cosmic cultures" and he saw them as "Children of God." He was present at Steven Bassett's X-Conference, for which I served as interpreter, in Washington DC, in 2005, and was awarded by Bassett for his courage. We both were filmed for the documentary *Fastwalkers*, and that last appearance of Monsignor Balducci is historic. Although he is no longer with us in corporeal form, his words will live on as they represent the unofficial position of the Catholic Church, which has a massive observatory in Arizona and is looking to the skies.

Picutred: Top (left to right): Monsignor Balducci and Dr. Steven Greer; Monsignor Balducci, Paola Harris and Steven Bassett; Center: Monsignor Balducci with Jaime Maussan; Bottom (left to right): Monsignor Balducci, Dr. John Mack and Paola Harris; Monsignor Balducci, Dr. John Mack.

"The city of Mexico is blessed with UFO Sightings. I will continue to be spokesman for the opening up of public opinion and Church attention towards the people from the stars. I will ask the Vatican to dedicate the religious feast day 'Christ, the King of the Universe' to include all its inhabitants!" ––Corrado Balducci, Rome, March 2006

At a conference in Rome in March 2005, organized by *Starworks Italia* and *Area 51 Magazine* and featuring special guest, Mexican journalist Jaime Maussan, Monsignor Corrado Balducci told the audience that Mexico was blessed with so many sightings because of its incredible openness and faith. Both Jaime Maussan and Monsignor Balducci were awarded the

International George Adamski Award at the event in Rome. Mexican Journalist Jaime Maussan explained to the audience that he became interested in the UFO phenomenon after viewing them when they appeared during the last solar eclipse over Mexico.

After seeing all this amazing Mexican film footage, Monsignor Balducci said that the Vatican is very interested in these phenomena and that he was designated spokesman. He told the audience that he had written a note about the importance of his presence at the X-Conference in Washington, D.C. in 2005 to Pope Benedict XVI, and that he also knew that the late Pope John Paul followed his many TV appearances speaking about UFOs. He added that in the Bible, Jesus is called "King of the Universe" sixty-six times and that, in this phrase, it is understood as the "universe and its inhabitants."

"There is such a variety of animal and plant species on the planet, do we not assume God would only create one type of life?" added Balducci. "I always wish to be the spokesman for these star peoples, who also are part of God's glory, and I will continue to bring it to the attention of the Holy Mother Church."

"If aliens are visiting us," he added, "they must be much more evolved because the human species is the lowest rung on the ladder of spiritual development. We have been given discernment and we still fight and kill and are attracted to wrongdoing. If the Church is founded on witness testimony then why can't the governments of the planet believe all the thousands of witnesses who are testimonies to this reality? It is time to speak up and tell the truth!"

Planetary Challenges in a Time of Change

It is a new year, 2012, on this beautiful planet, which is burdened with ecological global disaster (the third hottest year recorded) and with the threat of potential destruction by nuclear attacks. The fighting never stops but we are still being watched and visited.

In the UFO field, two incredible documentaries have surfaced in the United States. The first, *Fastwalkers*, has a spiritual theme and some pretty important researchers, such as Steven Greer, Stanton Freedman and Sgt. Major Robert Dean. But the appearance of Monsignor Balducci is a first––an ante prima. It is part of the unconventional wisdom from extraordinary people seen the world over. He is one of "ours" in Italy.

The second DVD, called *The Greatest Story Ever Denied*, is an editing masterpiece of Jose Escamilla. It contains all the military witnesses involved in the UFO cover-up from the 2001 *Disclosure Project,* in sound-bytes. The background music is incredibly beautiful but two things impressed me: the over 2500 hours of uninterrupted live broadcasts and NASA footage from Martyn Stubbs. It includes the voice in the NASA control room actually saying to the astronauts, "We are tracking the alien vehicle." Yes. The *alien vehicle*!

In the DVD, Colonel Philip Corso is quoted as saying: "Give this information to the young people of the world and this country. They want to hear it! They want it. Give it to them! Don't hide it and tell lies and make stories. They are not stupid!"

We could see from his words and code of ethics that Colonel Corso was a fine soldier and patriotic man. He was a man of "uncommon wisdom and courage." However, in the next

section we will see how back engineering causes challenges for *Exopolitics*. The back engineering of technology confuses the issue in this *Exopolitical* study and causes the secret, alien-inspired technology to become the major stumbling block in the *Disclosure* process. The nation possessing this technology rules the world. That is why the secret is kept secret! Alien vehicles do not use gasoline.

Section Three
Challenges and Protocols for Future Contact The Role of Galactic Diplomacy

Clip from Actor's Studio Interview
Question: Mr. Spielberg. You said you hate most when people do not listen. Would you give us some advice as young people who often do not want to listen. What is the importance of listening and lastly, do you believe in Aliens?
Answer: Well, I was taught by my mom and dad that in Judaism the most important prayer is O Hear, O Israel, the Lord thy God, the Lord is One and it was taught to me since childhood that the most important thing I could do as a Jew is to "listen" and that was not a way for a parent to say "I know more than you. I'm the boss, you shut up. I'll do all the talking." That was not that way at all.

They meant listen to yourself. Listen to the little whispers that we tend to not want to hear because they are too soft. We tend to want to listen to the shout, not the whisper and so listening carefully is what I was taught all through my life. What I'm just saying is that, when people don't listen, it is not that they don't learn, it is just that they just deny themselves tremendous opportunities and glorious choices. They deny themselves this and it is their own damn fault.

Yes I do believe in Aliens!

"Exopolitics is a non-academic discipline that deals with the implications of possible contact between humans and extraterrestrial civilizations. In a broader context, Exopolitics deals with the political implications of purported

extraterrestrial-related phenomena. Critical questions include what, if any, political framework might be established between human beings and extraterrestrials." ––Wikipedia: The Free Encyclopedia

Since this section is dedicated to establishing a framework for contact, then it might be beneficial to "frame" the following interviews around several suggested protocols. These are hypothetical. I suggest we begin somewhere when we support the discipline of *Exopolitics*.

It's bizarre to think we can research and investigate UFOs––move towards the big UFO answer––while at the same time utterly ignoring the idea of actually meeting with extraterrestrials.

The New Physics: Time Travel

It has been in the last few years that I have moved away from "nuts and bolts" Ufology and the archiving of sightings to a more activist position of galactic diplomacy and preparing for inevitable "contact" on a political level. I am looking at protocols like the CSETI protocols and political citizen diplomacy efforts like that of Ambassador John MacDonald who spoke at the Hawaii conference in June of 2006 on how to initiate dialogue the way he did for the Northern Ireland conflict. He said that world governments have their protocols that are not always as successful as citizen diplomacy in getting both sides to sit at the table. Both he and the honorable Paul Hellyer also presented at this meeting, stressing mutual respect for both sides. This process must be organized somehow but we are talking about a near impossibility because these are Cosmic Cultures and we may have little in common.

We are dealing with Cosmic Cultures when we are dealing with aliens. Clifford Stone and Colonel Philip Corso both said there were some fifty different cultures recorded in Pentagon files. They are not only Nordic blondes, or Grey Extraterrestrial Biological Entities (EBE) or Reptilian. There are races that look like us, as we will see in the Charles Hall case of the Tall Whites on the Nellis Indian Springs base; there are small creatures with reddish brown skin as in the Varginha Brazilian case; and there are the *balls of light*, spheres, orbs, *fastwalkers* or intelligent disembodied entities for which I name this book. There are beings of pure light that do not need bodies.

When we throw these into the mix, it causes us confusion because we westerners understand nothing that is not solid or concrete. We live in a three-dimensional, material world. We are conditioned not to take this view seriously. Our culture prohibits it. But whether you wish to go there or not; these phenomena exist on a concrete plane.

The two examples I wish to use that have influenced my thinking and the title of this book are the case of Pier Luigi Ighina and the case of the evacuation of the village of Caronia on the southern coast of Sicily. These two cases caused me to throw away any preconceived notions of conventional alien visitation. I had no choice but to add new information to my intellectual data bank and though I am discussing it in this book, I still have trouble digesting it as I am not a contactee nor have I had any of this direct contact. But I am seeing that in my reality, the image of these cybernetic disembodied races are everywhere. They appear as *balls of light*.

The first example comes from a story I first saw on our eight o'clock Italian television news about a village in Southern Sicily called Caronia that had a self-combusting house. These phenomena were studied by our scientists and by our

military––especially the Navy––because it was continuous and affected so many people in the village. We wrote an article in our No. 9 (June 2006) issue of UFO magazine *Area 51*. The article was titled "The Village of Fire" because these *fireballs* came out of what seemed to be a base in the sea and entered homes, went around the people, the domestic pets, hurt no one but then interacted with the electrical appliances and the houses caught fire. To us this seemed to be "intelligent" phenomena.

These phenomena first began in January 2004, in the province of Messina in Sicily in the town called Marittima di Caronia. In February of that year, the Italian Electric company (ENEL) made a thorough investigation of the voltage boxes and decided to shut down the electricity. The problem was that the phenomena still continued with new fires and burning wires even without the electrical feed. How can this happen without electrical energy to fuel this combustion? Even the sofas and couches were catching fire in the homes. All this was happening in front of the ENEL technicians and townspeople, so on February 9th, the Italian Civil Defence force proclaimed that zone off limits and cordoned it off. Surveillance cameras were placed there and, for it's own protection, the whole town was evacuated. All of this caused the fires to stop. But that zone is still under surveillance. Some interesting explanations have been that it was a volcanic or geo-thermic phenomena but most scientists disagree because it is such an isolated case. To add to this mystery, some fisherman reported a "boiling effect" in the water as they saw balls of green light exiting from the sea and some reported sightings of unidentified flying objects. Several citizens saw these spheres in their home but they did not experience any burns or illness as their electric appliances caught fire. If this is a mystery connected to the UFO

phenomena, we know there must be some secret investigation going on somewhere.

There are some who are blaming the infamous project HAARP and connect it to a microwave attack. They claim that the town is an experiment of the “Dark Forces” that direct these HAARP weather alteration experiments.

All in all there were several things that stuck my curiosity. One was that these balls of light avoided hurting the inhabitants as they shot around the houses and that secondly, they seemed to rise out of the water. What kind of civilization is this? How do you you deal with this? How do you communicate with it? I did ask a military advisor about Caronia and he simply said, “If this UFO hypothesis were to be true, we are terrified because we can do little except to protect the people. Furthermore we would truly feel helpless as if our hands were tied. What would we do? Attack them? With what?”

Pictured: NASA's STS-75

I could see his frustration but it brought home to me the fact that *humanity* needs to deal with it and not ignore it. We need to have some protocols in place. We need to discuss it. Most of all, we need to have clarity and openness and the countries of the world need to share research on a planetary level because it may be happening somewhere else. Balls of light, whether they be filmed by NASA around the Tether that broke in space (STS-75) as seen in the Escamilla documentary, or are *Orbs* around the STS missions, or whether they are light balls coming out of the Adriatic Sea in the 1970s as in the case of the Pescara phenomena as reported by fishermen in Italy, or whether they appear as orange orbs over Phoenix during the *Phoenix Lights* event on March 13, 1997 as described and filmed by Dr. Lynne Kitei. All this needs to be studied and added to current UFO research.

So I am suggesting those orbs that appear in the "infra-red film" taken in Mexico and perhaps those that show up with particular characteristics on digital photos need to be dealt

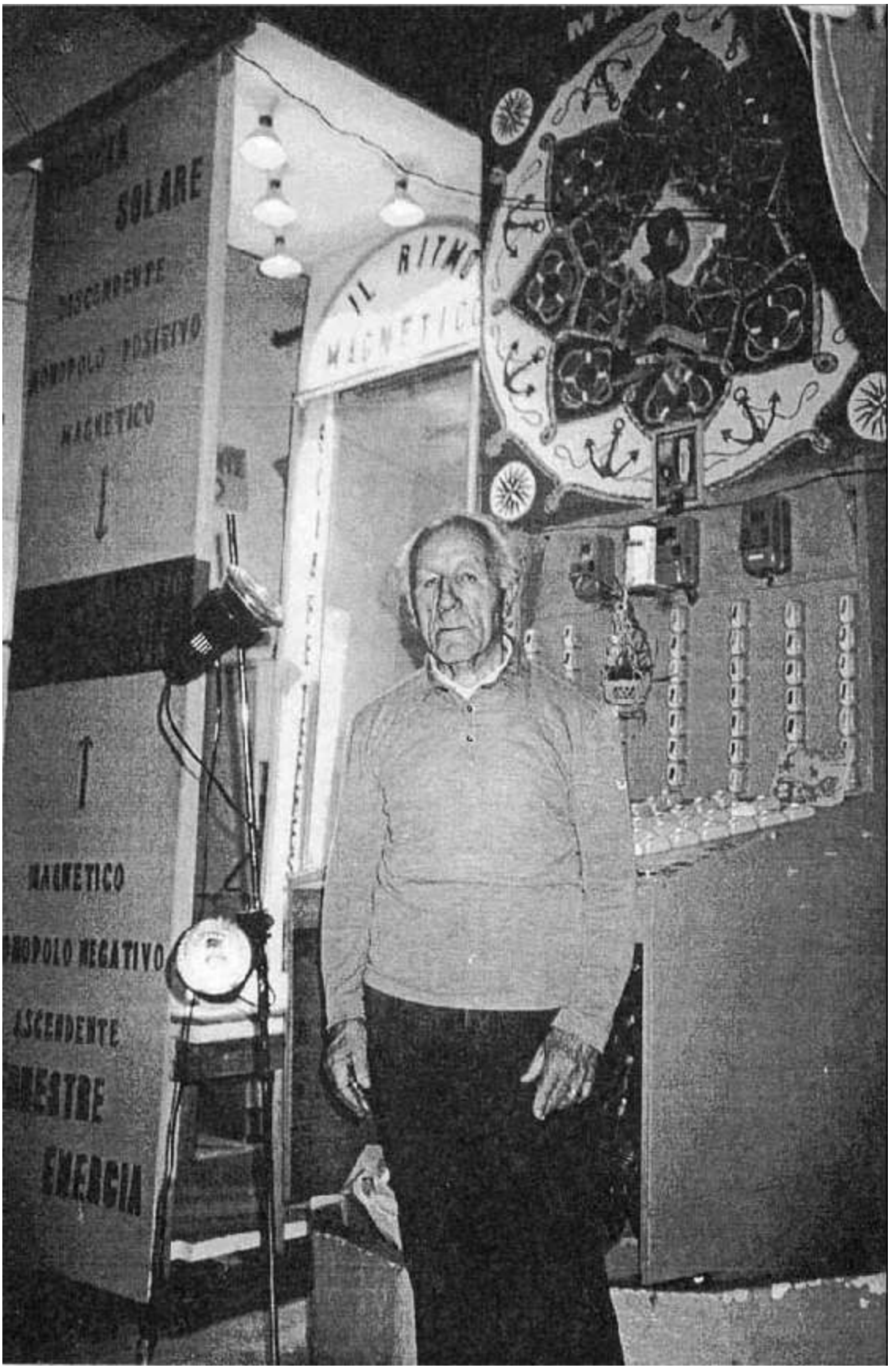
with. Spheres of light of all kinds and orbs are a new reality and may be under intelligent control if they themselves are not intelligences. The one clear orb that has a definite signature pattern on my cover was taken by Barb McCombs in Avesbury, England; that is considered “crop circle” country, and the one with the child’s face on my photo section was taken by Pino Morelli in a crop circle in Italy this year. The appearance in photos of particular orbs in movement with a particular signature needs to be studied. Particles of dust and moisture does not intelligently move up and around rooms, fields and often around certain people like the one on Steven Greer’s chest (pictured below). There is some message here, some opening, some new discovery that is future years will be seen as common place when humanity trains its eyes to the infrared spectrum. It is just the beginning.

Like the expert Mexican researcher journalist Jaime Maussan who is still receiving astounding film footage of flotillas of hundreds of orbs flying under intelligent control over Mexico City, I predict that with the proper awareness and serious study, these light spheres will become the focus of future UFO

research. They may not be conventional craft but they are still to be taken seriously and I wish to open the door to that possibility with this book. If you do not think it affects mankind, then ask those one hundred and forty people who were asked to leave their homes in Caronia, Sicily. What is left there are surveillance cameras. Ironically we are watching "those" who are watching us.

The second incident that brought my attention to "light beings" happened in 2003. It was then that I made a trip up to Imola, Italy with a friend Illario Pierpaoli. Imola is famous for its Ferrari car racing. But Imola is also where a ninety-year old collaborator of Guglierlmo Marconi named Pier luigi Ighina had his laboratory. In Italy he is known as a scientist who "came from the stars." In Italian scientific research, he was the genius that, in only sixteen years, discovered what he called "the magnetic atom." It is said that he was Marconi's cosmic and spiritual guide when he and Marconi worked on secret projects together that were hidden from conventional scientific channels.

His inventions that influence electromagnetic field around every living thing are renowned in Italy. He has created special antennas that can cure disease, dissipate clouds and cause natural phenomena to happen. He had registered patents for all these devises plus he has written a book in Italian about the magnetic atom called *L'atomo magnetico*.


SOLARE
MAGNETICO
MAGNETICO

Pictured: Pier Luigi Ighina

Ighina was a charismatic old man, already in his nineties when I interviewed him and perfectly lucid with a head of beautiful white hair. I am glad that I met him before he passed away two years ago because he shocked me out of my complacency.

When I arrived in his three room rustic laboratory in the country, the first thing that struck me as I walked in were the colorful portraits of beautiful beings of light that were hung very high on the walls. They had an Indian style as their clothing resembled mandalas of colored lights. Instead of looking at the many inventions on his wooden workbench, I asked Igina, “Who are those people? Did you live in India?” He answered that those were the “space brothers” that had “downloaded” him and Guglielmo Marconi with these inventions and the information about the workings of the universe. At the time I did not know that Tesla claimed to have a very similar heritage, that he had similar claims and was constantly persecuted by conventional science and government intelligence agencies. These geniuses had all been contemporaries.

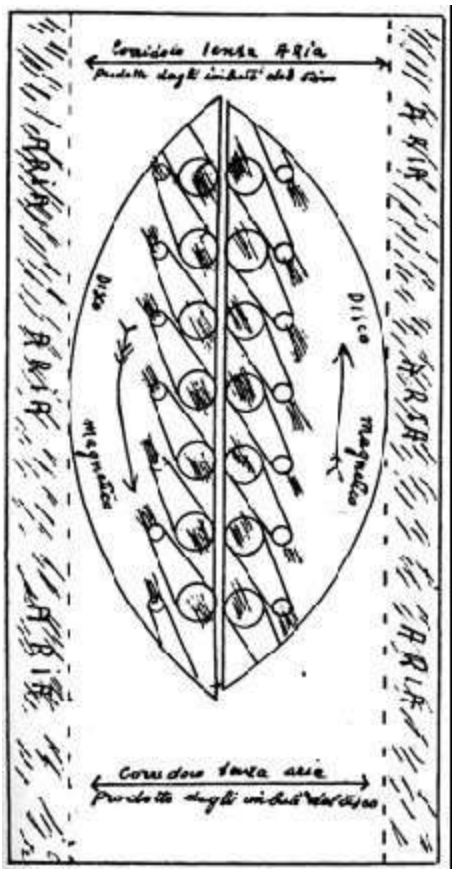


Diagram by Pier Luigi Ighina.

So space brothers are downloading scientists and for what reason? According to Igina, it was a warning that the Earth was in its final death throws due to a dying ecology and a lack of spiritual concern from its inhabitants. “We are in auto-destruction mode and these light beings were warning us,” he said. So what I surmised was that the information given to Ighina was that electromagnetism and solar energy (since many of his inventions had solar collectors attached to a generator which I imagined was for magnification) was the salvation of mankind. These devices cured all types of diseases and provided new sources of energy from nature itself. Well, I thought of the fact that this planet is run economically by the Trans-national companies, and oil, banking and pharmaceutical conglomerates. They are the very foundation of our society and

ironically the very cause of our ruin. The masses are kept under control, living in consumer mode and to think that Pier Luigi Ighina believed the key to our salvation was nature, the sun, and its solar energy.

There were many testimonials of Ighina's genius and Ighina's success in Italy. He is called "the cosmic scientist" and he told me personally that sometimes on a hillside he spoke to these people, these light beings who were more inter-dimensional than interplanetary. There is a *thought*. Not all aliens come from our galaxy or from other planets but exist on different planes of reality. Are there not eleven dimensions now accepted by modern theoretical physicists? I had to face that not only were there aliens without bodies but those who are downloading scientists with earth-shattering information. I later learned that there is a Marconi tower in England close to where the *Arecibo Reply* crop circle appeared and that the Vatican financed some of Marconi's work. There is much investigation still to do that could give us some answers. That year I spoke in Naples in a bookstore and was told that Marconi's daughter was in the audience. A middle-aged woman approached me and whispered in my ear that she needed to speak to me. She simply told me I was on the right track and aliens exist, but I have been trying to contact her ever since. She has yet to respond. I can understand because the theory that many of our scientific discoveries came from the stars would be revolutionary and very controversial in our closed minded society. On the other hand, I am convinced this is a fact based on the testimony of Pier Luigi Ighina and the books about Nikola Tesla and some confidential conversations I have had with several scientists who are my friends.

In the United States, controversial theoretical physicist Jack Sarfatti, who lives in San Francisco, maintains that as a teenager

he received several cryptic-phone calls from a robotic computerized voice aboard a space ship saying he would meet other scientists like him in twenty years, and ironically he was part of a gifted program created by Walter Breen called *Starfleet Academy*. But then Breen is supposedly the creator of MENSA the association used to identify genius level human beings. Sarfatti adds that in 1953 in Brooklyn New York, there was a Jr. American Rocket Society Basement Laboratory near Brooklyn College, Flatbus; that Walter Breen's Super Kids were financed by Dr. William Sheldon, Eugene McDermott, Arthur Young, Andrija Puharich, L Ron Hubbard "Round Table" with links to *Sandia* in New Mexico. See Sarfatti's book *Destiny Matrix* for the whole story and begin to connect a few dots! These names are impressive movers and shapers of our current modern sometimes "New Age" discoveries and cosmic thinking but they are also linked to the esoteric philosophies like *Scientology*. All this sounds like a Roddenberry science fiction script from *Star Trek*.

From the Phyllis Schlemmer's book *The Only Planet Of Choice*, we know that on at least one occasion Gene Roddenberry asked questions of Tom, spokesman for the Cybernetic *council of nine* disembodied entities whom Schlemmer channeled. According to the book *The Stargate Conspiracy,* this group of alien entities became the inspiration for the New Age practices including some of the SRI PSI scientific research with Israeli psychic Uri Geller. We can see a *ball of light* connection with his story. When Uri was a young child of five, he was supposedly beamed in the forehead by a light being who activated his metal bending powers. In Israel, recently there seems to be a witness to that event who says he followed this ball of light to Uri's apartment and it went right through the door. After all these years, we seem to be peeling off the layers of the onion and we

may be getting to some *truth*. Uri is very connected to Remote Viewing and psychic experiments of the ’70s at SRI, and also, the UFO phenomena as he photographed several UFOs when he was young. He, like Spielberg in the Actor’s Studio interview, has publicly stated that he firmly believes in aliens. When hypnotized by Andrja Pulharich, it seems Uri has a relationship to a super computer called Spectra aboard a space ship. Uri Geller has not only become a planetary phenomenon but as a friend, I know him as a regular guy who has a regular family.

It is interesting that on his website Uri Geller is pictured with American Senators: Senator Pete Domenici, Former Senator Alan Cranston, (deceased), Senator Fritz Hollings (South. Carolina), and on another occasion Uri is pictured with Vice President Al Gore, Yuli M. Vorontsov, First Deputy Foreign Minister of the Soviet Union and Anthony Lake (then National Security advisor, later head of the CIA), and Senator Claiborne Pell, Chairman of the US Senate Foreign Relations Committee. Uri’s task was to mentally bombard Yuli Vorontsov and the group at the *Nuclear Arms Reduction Treaty* negotiations in Geneva, Switzerland to sign the nuclear treaty, which they did. So we can surmise that the once light-beamed Uri Geller is involved in these political peace-making efforts using the only communication method we have to talk to alien cultures, balls of light, or disembodied entities and so on and so forth and that is by mental telepathy.

Another interesting fact is that Jack Sarfatti states that it was he who introduced Uri Geller to Steven Spielberg and by connecting these dots; I can see where the ’70s paranormal research and revolutionary discoveries is the key to this puzzle of “alien intervention!” There were some interesting conversations going on with some major top players in Hollywood and some interesting films emerged from this.

Science Fiction, served by the Hollywood film industry, has provided a bridge to the general public to spread awareness, test reactions and manipulate information by passing some factual data as fantasy to entertain the masses. Speaking about *Close Encounters of the Third Kind,* Steven Spielberg is quoted as saying "I really found my faith when I learned that the government *was opposed* to the film. If NASA took the time to write me a twenty-page letter, then I knew there must be something happening."

The first movie to receive government approval was *The Day the Earth Stood Still.* It warned that earthlings must become peaceful or else be quarantined. Then came *Close Encounters of the Third Kind* (a term coined by Dr. Hynek himself) that came out in 1978 and it tested the public reaction to the hundreds of sightings worldwide. The late Dr. John Mack, a Harvard University professor who wrote the book Abduction, then studied the contact scenario or alien abduction scenario. He found that these people believed they were telling the truth about their contact experience. On a subconscious level, planetary disclosure on the 1970s was creeping into our reality and either the governments were guiding it or they were threatened by it. I am guessing it was a little bit of both.

But we return to two elements that are the theme of this book*: cybernetic beings,* sometimes called artificial intelligence, and *balls of light*, not your conventional "alien" profiles. Both have to do with the stories above. If you wish to complicate life and throw the work of Philip K. Dick into the mix, then it gets very complex because we are questioning our reality as regard to the existence of *time travel*. I cannot exclude this as Sarfatti mentions it in the case of his formulas in theoretical physics with the component of consciousness. He, as well as I, believes these phenomena are connected with time travel and the

awareness of synchronicities all described in concept of Valis created by Sci-Fi writer Philip K. Dick who talks of cybernetic super computers. As we know, Philip Dick wrote the story line for the popular films *Bladerunner, Minority Report* and *Paycheck*. It is said that he, like Andrija Puharich, was somewhat involved with the Intelligence Community, and was one of those 1970s players. Jack Sarfatti really identifies with his work.

Is this synchronistic principle evidence of Philip K. Dick's *Valis* and/or Jack Sarfatti's super-cosmos principle at work? Dick says in *Valis* that, *"We are not individuals. We are stations in the single mind."* Also that, *"Space and Time were revealed as mere mechanisms of separation."* Philip K. Dick has written that *Valis* showed him the "Golden Section," the Fibonacci series of numbers (the law-of-similarities). Recalling that I'd read on Sarfatti Science Seminar that Philip K. Dick was on record having said *Valis* was at work in the (non-local) cause and effecting of events taking place during WWII, and also Philip Dick said that Valis showed him the Golden Section and Fibonacci series. "Non-locality" is the current scientific explanation for all matter being connected and consciousness being part of that matter whether it is a neutron that is being stimulated and reacts in a laboratory somewhere else or human minds being affected by far away events. Former SRI physicist Russell Targ says, "This is responsible for our honed telepathic ability and our ability to see into a 'possible future' and the synchronicities that may result." Einstein once termed the distinction between past, present and future "a stubborn illusion." So, where does it leave us poor humans in our understanding of our true reality and in particular the UFO Phenomena?

On a personal level, synchronistic irony is what leads me into

this research after I saw the film *Close Encounters of the Third Kind* and with my Hynek connection. It lead me on the path to where I am today, although I would have preferred a phone call from a "supercomputer" aboard a space ship a la Jack Sarfatti.

From the following paper on time travel, I think I need to present the following concepts that are but theories. I need to present this before I go into the interview I did with Al Bielek who says he took part in the famous Philadelphia Experiment, which opened a dimensional porthole that let in diverse alien races. The Time Travel idea cannot be excluded from our research nor from this book. In a brilliant article by Dennis Overbye, (*NY Times* staff writer, Tuesday, June 28, 2005) titled "Time Travel: Remembrance of Things Future: The Mystery of Time Travel," he says that famed gravitational physicist Dr.Kip Thorne of Cal Tech postulates that wormholes [Einstein-Rosen bridge] can be used as a sort of "Galactic subway" for time travel by threading together wormholes with the Casimir energy, thereby keeping them apart and from collapsing. Thorne's theory was used in the Carl Sagan inspired movie *Contact* for Jodie Foster's faster-than-light travel across the galaxy using these wormholes. Dr. J Richard Gott, author of the 2001 book *Time Travel in Einstein's Universe: The Physical Possibilities of Travel Through Time,* is one of a small breed of physicists who spend part of their time (and their research grants) thinking about wormholes in space, warp drives and other cosmic constructions that *absurdly advanced civilizations* might use to travel through time. If Einstein's theory of *gravity* and space-time is true, then it allows for the ability to go back in time and, for example, kill your grandfather.

"When it comes to the nature of time, physicists are pretty much at as much of a loss as the rest of us who seem hopelessly swept along in its current. The mystery of time is connected with

some of the thorniest questions in physics, as well as in philosophy, like why we remember the past but not the future."

The issues raised by time travel says this *New York Times* article "are connected to these questions." Dr. Lawrence Krauss, a physicist at Case Western Reserve University in Cleveland and author of the book *The Physics of Star Trek* said, "The minute you have time travel you have paradoxes," explaining that if you can go backward in time, you confront fundamental issues like cause-and-effect or, if there can be two of you at once, the meaning of your own identity. A refined theory of time would have to explain, "how a sensible world could result from something so nonsensical?" "That's why time travel is philosophically important and has captivated the public, who care about these paradoxes," he explained. At stake, said Dr. David Z. Albert, the philosopher and author of his own time book, *Time and Chance,* is "what kind of view science presents us of the world."

Jack Sarfatti, in one of his many emails to his Sarfatti Physics Seminar groups added this research data: "It was nearly two decades ago when science fiction media (TV, film and novels) began to adopt traversable wormholes, and, more recently, '*stargates*' for interstellar travel schemes that allowed their heroes and heroines to travel throughout our galaxy. Little did anyone outside of the study of relativity physics know, but, in 1985, physicists M. Morris and K. Thorne at CalTech had in fact discovered the principle of traversable wormholes right out of Einstein's *General Theory of Relativity* (GTR, published in 1915). Morris and Thorne (1988).

"Interesting enough, in 1988, Morris, Thorne and Yurtsever did this as an academic exercise, and in the form of problems for a physics final exam, at the request of Carl Sagan who had then completed the draft of his novel Contact. Sagan wanted to

follow the genre of what we call science fiction, whereby the story's plot would rely on cutting-edge physics concepts to make it more realistic and technically plausible. This little exercise ended up becoming one of the greatest cottage industries in general relativity research––the study of traversable wormholes and time machines. Wormholes are hyperspace tunnels through space-time connecting together either remote regions within our universe or two different universes; they even connect together different dimensions and different times. Space travelers would enter one side of the tunnel and exit out the other, passing through the tunnel along the way."

This concept of time-travel and the discussion of the Philadelphia experiment always came up in conversations with Colonel Corso, author of *The Day After Roswell*. I was always curious about this so when I happened to run into Al Bielek at the Laughlin UFO Congress, I had my own questions to ask. This is the text of what he said. It connects to the discussion of dimensional portals and opening up of a dimension to cause the visits of several ET craft and maybe *balls of light* craft. The idea of transporting consciousness from one physical body to another as Al Bielek claims happen to him, is very controversial but worth the study. It is also interesting that he says *Tesla coils* were involved and that Einstein was aware of this. This becomes one of our future challenges in Ufology: to understand Time, Time Travel, "fast maneuvering" craft or *Fastwalkers* and maybe to design a "new physics!"

The Phildelphia Experiment and Time Travel: Interview with Al Bielek

Interview with Al Bielek
Laughlin, Nevada
March, 2005

Paola: What was the Montauk Project?

Bielek: That was a project that appeared between 1975 and 1983. It collapsed and was resurrected in 1987. The German scientists, who came over, under Operation Paperclip, ran it. They worked for twenty years at Brookhaven National Laboratories and they were kicked out of there about 1967. While looking for a new home, they heard about Montauk and the projects out there and they went out there. At that time it was still operated by the U.S. Military Air Force. They were doing the research for [the] SAGE radar project: Over-the-Horizon radar (OTH). When they got through with the testing and they were in the process of shutting them down, the German scientists heard about it. The German scientists said, "We would like to do some further research. We'd like to show you how to do things, like win the next war by pushing a button." The military were very interested. So the scientists came in and the Military packed up and left and they were there from 1968 until 1983, when it collapsed and was resurrected for a few years in 1987 by the same German scientists, until the Air Force took it over in 1991. In taking it, the Air Force was concerned with the Hale-Bop Comet problem. They knew about it before Dr. Hale and Dr. Bop ever knew about it and they were doing the work to defect it, which they did do, successfully. The Air Force project ––"Project Sky

Pebbles" was the official name––closed down in 1998 and the Navy came in and took over about the summer of 1998 and they are there still, in the underground. They cleaned off almost all of the old buildings, with the exception of the radar tower, and cleaned it up and it is a park now. So Montauk Point, on the surface, is a park. Underground, it is still a military base, being used for the Navy, and nobody knows for what and nobody that I know of, at this point, has any knowledge of what they were doing and why they are there at the present time. A group of civilians are working for them and have their own separate housing village.

Paola: The Montauk Project has to do with time travel, right?

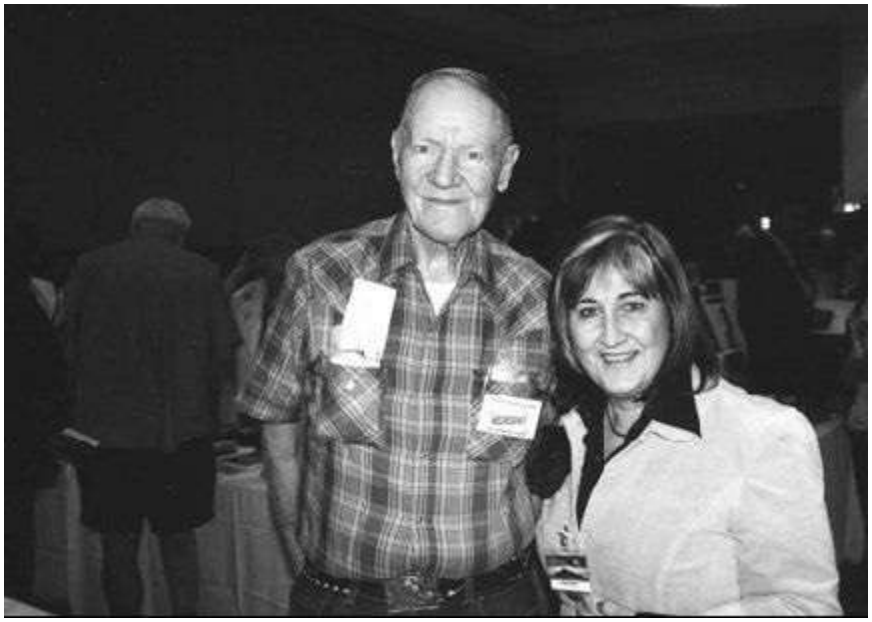
Bielek: It had to do with time travel and mind control. The Montauk boys came out of there originally and they were moved off that base to another area down under, all connected with every major city in the US and major cities in Europe.

Paola: You know I need to ask you this because I have to. How are you privy to this information? How do you know?

Bielek: Because I was part of it. I was part of the Montauk Project and I was a major part of the Philadelphia Experiment. I worked for the Montauk Project for a number of years. I was a civilian. Originally, they put in the SAGE system: 28 radar towers around the periphery of the US and, as they went to the next phase, which was a higher-powered system (Bemus Project), they could pick up a missile launched in Russia as it left the ground.

The tower on Long Island remained completely operative after the Military pulled out and the Germans took it over to build their own systems. It was also done in conjunction with a group of aliens that the US government said would be part of

the project to develop the time tunnel. We knew how to do time travel at that point but we did not know how to make a wormhole.



Pictured: Al Bielek and Paola Harris, 2005.

Paola: What year was this?

Bielek: Montauk became operational under the German control approximately in 1970 and became effective about 1976 until 1983.

Paola: I have to ask about the alien involvement. Do you know about the alien involvement or were you involved with the aliens?

Bielek: Montauk Point was called that because originally the Montauk Indians were there. They were kicked out by the U.S. Government about 1900. The Pyramids were torn down. I understand there were pyramids there. I understand that there are some people on the island who have pictures of it, but I have not seen it myself.

Paola: Have you seen the aliens?

Bielek: Yes, at Montauk.

Paola: What were they? The human-type aliens?

Bielek: No. They were a mixture of the human-type as well as some others from all over, including a Draco, who was in charge of some others.

Paola: A Draco. Is that a Reptilian type?

Bielek: A particular species of alien who stands 7-feet tall. Some are winged; some are not. They are very heavy, about 450 pounds. They are very intelligent and the one who was there was in charge of other aliens. They had appeared on the Eldridge deck in 1943, when we ripped a hole through the fabric of space-time and became part of the collaboration on time travel technology. They said, "We can show you how to create this wormhole."

Paola: Are you saying aliens were involved with building time travel technology? In what way?

Bielek: You can do that simultaneously. You can build the equipment; you can do that. "We will show you what to build and how to build it."

Paola: What would be the benefit of their teaching us how to build time-travel equipment? What would be the benefit for them? What would they get out of it?

Bielek: What they got out of it was that they told the government that: "We have our agenda. We wish to use the station when it is working properly. We wish to use it for our own agenda." The government agreed with that. What "our own agenda" was happened on August 12, 1983, when they locked up with the Eldridge, or the ship they called the Eldridge and, on August 12, 1943, they threw a hole in space-time, forty-

years wide, in which to let their own large ships through, because their ships were in a war with somebody else and they wanted to get through to this universe.

Paola: So was it like tearing a hole in a dimension to let them through. Is that part of the Philadelphia Experiment or is it a spin off? Did they know they were going to do that?

Bielek: They knew they were going to do that and they did it deliberately because they delayed the second test for the Philadelphia Experiment until August 12, 1943. It had to be on August 12th because the Earth has its own biorhythms––like the human biorhythms. They all peak out, like the Earth biorhythms peak out, all four of them. The Earth's peak out on August 12th every twenty years; plus or minus half a day. That is, [the years] 1943, 1963, 1983, 2003, 2023 have a synchronizing effect on certain affairs and certain matters. In the case of August 12, 1983, we were conducting experiments; they were conducting the Montauk Experiment. The two experiments synchronized and locked in. That was done very deliberately, not only to pull the Eldridge into Hyperspace, but in order to produce a sort of wormhole effect––to actually cause a breach in space-time large enough for the aliens' ships to get through.

Paola: OK. You said "alien ships" plural, so there are different alien ships and brands of aliens who want to get through that hole?

Bielek: They could.

Paola: You don't know which ones came through? You don't know who was at war?

Bielek: I do not know. Possibly the government knew.

Paola: And this information came through to you as you supposedly were part of that project?

Bielek: Yes. We found out some of the missing links afterwards. We jumped off the ship; we wound up in 1983, on the territory of Montauk, and we were taken in to meet John Von Neumann and some of the other people and they told us quite a bit of what was going on. They, themselves, did not know about the alien connection causing the breech in space-time but they knew the two experiments had locked up. Von Neumann told us that so we had to go back to the ship and destroy the equipment so the ship would return to its original starting point. We said; "We don't know how we got here; how can you send us to the decks of the Eldridge?" They said, "No problem! We can take control over space-time. We can send you anyplace we want."

Paola: The government said this?

Bielek: No. John von Neumann said that. They did. They sent us through the wormhole to the decks of the Eldridge.

Paola: They sent you through the wormhole?

Bielek: Duncan and myself.

Paola: How does that feel? Is that just being here one minute and gone the next?

Bielek: Well, we knew we were being propelled through something. There is a slight feeling when you are going through space-time. The first trip you make can be quite nauseating and after that you sort of get used to it.

Paola: You got dizzy and nauseated and that kind of thing? It is like traveling?

Bielek: Well, we knew we were being propelled through

something. There is a slight feeling when you go through a wormhole. We were a little nauseated, not like the first time, but, in any case, we went back and we destroyed the equipment as directed and the ship returned to 1943 and we then saw the problem of the sailors buried in the steel deck and the bulkhead. Duncan took one look at this and he headed for the railing, jumped over and disappeared––and went back to Montauk in the 1980s and worked there and had some problems himself. But that was in the records we read later. After passage of normal time and Duncan no longer there, I became part of the Montauk Project at a later date. Much later, after they changed my identity from Ed Cameron to Al Bielek, because I was there on Montauk as Al Bielek.

Paola: In other words Al Bielek was Ed Cameron. Would not it be the other way around?

Bielek: They are both the same person. Except, in 1953, the Navy got tired of me and wanted to find some way of getting rid of me without killing me, because they knew it would cause enormous reactions and problems in terms of space-time; because they were afraid I had traveled so much in time that there would be a collapse in the space-time continuum in the period where I had been and I had gone through, so they decided they couldn't do that. So they cooked up a plot to age-regress me; whitewash all my memories. They regressed me to a nine-month old kid and sent me back to another family in the past, to 1927, which were the Bieleks and those were the only parents I knew for many other years.

Paola: That is amazing! With this time travel thing, what would you say was the time, the dates that the government was working with time travel?

Bielek: 1938.

Paola: With the Nazis, right?

Bielek: The Nazis were working on it also but they never completely solved the problems. They solved the rest of them after they had been extracted from Germany, at the end of World War II, and brought to the United States under Operation Paperclip.

Paola: Those Paperclip guys did a lot of things, but Colonel Philip Corso had the feeling that the aliens at Roswell were from the future, coming back to warn us about nuclear power, and he believed that they were time travelers. He told me, "Paola, we have discovered a Time Machine!" But I never knew what he was talking about. But he did bring us material on the Phildelphia Experiment. Is there an occasion when somebody has changed the time-space continuum that you know of and history has changed?

Bielek: Yes.

Paola: Where would that be?

Bielek: I can think of two specific items. Number one: History says that the South lost the Civil War and they didn't; they won it! It was changed later, by the use of the Montauk Project, or a different one, I am not sure. But they went back and changed history deliberately because I run into people who remember the fact that the South won the Civil War and some of the earlier textbooks said that; the Southerners believed that, even when I was in high school. The second thing that turned up is–– how well do you remember the era of the German Nazis, the Swastika? Which way did it point at the top? Which way did it appear to be rotating in your memory?

Paola: The right?

Bielek: It always used to point to the left. That was the Nazi symbol for years. It was a sacred symbol of certain Indians that they took and, of course, those tribes do not like that happening. They objected violently. It was adopted by the Nazi hierarchy and pointed to left. Now it points to the right and I saw it happen on TV and I could not believe what I was seeing, because it always pointed to left and suddenly it was pointing to the right. The textbooks have changed, and the monuments, or anything that showed the Nazi swastika, suddenly it is all pointing to the right. It changes everything, even symbolically.

Paola: Colonel Corso said that certain events in time have been changed and we are in an altered timeline.

Bielek: We operate and live on, what you might call, a timeline. The time field is actually a closed loop; it is a gigantic loop. If you go far enough forward in time, you will wind up crossing over and going into the past because it is a connecting link, so to speak, and it is a huge loop. I cannot describe it as something physically in space, but in terms of time, it is a huge loop. I do not know how many years are involved in it, but eventually you will come to the cross-over, plus or minus the infinity point, as it is called, and you are in the past, the very ancient past in the galactic history and, if you keep going forward, you will eventually come up to our present time. It can be navigated with the proper time-travel equipment. You can go forward or backwards. Some scientists today say maybe time travel forward is possible but it is not possible in reverse. That is absolute nonsense! If you look at the equations correctly, you will see that you can go either way.

Paola: You can go either way. What I asked you specifically

though instead of just the swastika; is there an occasion like the death of Kennedy where he was alive and didn't get killed or of some person being here that should not be here?

Bielek: Specifically, no. I think it happened.

Paola: What Colonel Corso said is: "They came once, in the Roswell incident."

Bielek: There were two ships involved and the other disappeared, due to the radar system we had developed that was interfering with their navigation system.

Paola: But Corso said that he saw the ship ten years later, in 1957, in "Red Canyon," in an encounter. What benefit is it for us to have time travel technology?

Bielek: That is a very good question. I don't know as it has any real benefit.

Paola: It must, or they would not do it!

Bielek: It is a toy to certain government groups because they can use it to travel through time and change history. That is the principal reason it has been used. Of course, other travelers from the future have come into our time and in particular, The Wingmakers, out of the twenty-eighth century, and they have contributed some technology.

The premise is that a race of robots will come to the earth to take it over (the M51 group). Basically, if they, the scientists can take that point in time in which they the robotic race are about to discover the Earth and cloak the earth, as such, then the ship goes on by and doesn't see it.

They also are experimenting with sound, as in the movie Stargate. All of that music was synthesized in a computer. No human voice, no real instruments; they even replicated a 36-

foot-diameter, vast base drum, which does not exist now. I do not know if they have one in the future. All this was sent back and sent to the producers.

Paola: You said the benefit was to change history, but would it not be beneficial to tear another hole in space and create another situation that would benefit the aliens? Don't they come through and travel through wormholes that go to other realities?

Bielek: That is possible. If the aliens were to come in and were knowledgeable about space-time, yes, they could rearrange some of our history for us that would make it more advantageous for themselves. I do not know which aliens have time travel technologies but I know the Pleiadians do. We created wormholes with Montauk but the Ancients already had wormholes, called "Stargates." This is all possible.

Timeline of Time Travel

Details courtesy the website of Al Bielek, www.bielek.com

The story begins in June of 1943, with the U.S.S. Eldridge, DE (Destroyer Escort) 173, being fitted with tons of experimental electronic equipment. This included (according to one source):

- Two massive generators of 75 KVA each, mounted where the forward gun turret would have been, distributing their power through four magnetic coils mounted on the deck
- Three RF transmitters (2 megawatt CW each, mounted on the deck)
- Three thousand '6L6' power amplifier tubes (used to drive the field coils of the two generators)
- Special synchronizing and modulation circuits
- A host of other specialized hardware

These were employed to generate massive electromagnetic fields which, when properly configured, would be able to bend light and radio waves around the ship, thus making it invisible to enemy observers.

The experiment; said to have taken place at the Philadelphia Naval Yard and also at sea, took place on at least one occasion while in full view of the Merchant Marine Ship S.S. Andrew Furuseth and other observation ships. The Andrew Furuseth becomes significant because one of its crewmen is the source of most of the original material making up the PX legend. Carlos Allende, a.k.a. Carl Allen, wrote a series of strange letters to one Dr. Morris K. Jessup, in the 1950s, where he claims to have witnessed at least one of the several phases of the Phildelphia Experiment. At 0900 hours, on July 22, 1943, so the story goes, the power to the generators was turned on, and the massive electromagnetic fields started to build up. A greenish fog was seen to slowly envelop the ship, concealing it from view. Then the fog itself is said to have disappeared, taking the Eldridge with it; leaving only undisturbed water where the ship had been anchored only moments before. The elite officers of the Navy and scientists involved gazed in awe at their greatest achievement: the ship and crew were not only radar invisible but invisible to the eye as well! Everything worked as planned, and about fifteen minutes later they ordered the men to shut down the generators. The greenish fog slowly reappeared and the Eldridge began to dematerialize as the fog subsided, but it was evident to all that something had gone wrong. When boarded by personnel from shore, the crew above deck was found to be disoriented and nauseous. The Navy removed the crew and, shortly after, obtained another.

In the end, the Navy decided that they only wanted radar

invisibility, and the equipment was altered. On the October 28, 1943, at 17:15, the final test on the Eldridge was performed. The electromagnetic field generators were turned on again, and the Eldridge became near invisible; only a faint outline of the hull remained visible in the water. Everything was fine for the first few seconds; and then, in a blinding blue flash, the ship completely vanished. Within seconds it reappeared, miles away, in Norfolk, Virginia, and was seen for several minutes. The Eldridge then disappeared from Norfolk, as mysteriously as it had arrived, and reappeared back in Philadelphia Naval Yard. This time, most of the sailors were violently sick. Some of the crew was simply missing, never to return.

Some went crazy, but, strangest of all, five men were fused to the metal in the ship's structure. The men that survived were never the same again. Those that lived were discharged as "mentally unfit" for duty, regardless of their true condition. So, what had begun as an experiment in electronic camouflage ended up as an accidental teleportation of an entire ship and crew to a distant location and back again, all in a matter of minutes! Although the above may seem fantastic, one must remember that in the 1940s the atomic bomb was also being invented.

Timeline for Ed Cameron/Al Bielek, courtesy of www.bielek.com

1916: Birth date for Ed Cameron. Al Bielek is the regressed essence of Ed Cameron.

1927: Birth date of Al Bielek. Al's first memories are at Christmas, when he was one year old, and his understanding of all the conversation.

1943: August 13, 1943 - Date of the Phildelphia Experiment.

When Ed and Duncan Cameron jump off the U.S.S. Eldridge, they both land in the year 2137.

1953: Final year of Ed Cameron's linear experience. Ed knew too much and irritated Dr Edward Teller. A group of three voted Ed off the Atomic Bomb project and ultimately out of existence as Ed Cameron is regressed to Al Bielek to the year 1927.

1983: Ed and Duncan Cameron find themselves at Montauk in 1983, after spending six weeks in 2137. Dr. John Von Neumann greets the two and convinces them to time travel back to the U.S.S. Eldridge in 1943, to destroy the control equipment and shut the experiment down.

1970–88: Al is recruited to work at Montauk. He keeps the guise of his regular job as an electronics contractor, but works in an altered state at Montauk. He was a program manager for the Montauk Boys program, participated in the mind control experiments, and actively participated in time travel projects.

1988: His memories returned and he believes he was not used any further at Montauk.

2000-2011: Al Bielek speaks publicly about his involvement at Montauk and the Phildelphia Experiment. He is on over 50 radio talk shows and is a featured presenter at over 40 conferences.

2137: After Ed and Duncan jumped off the U.S.S. Eldridge in 1943; they landed in the year 2137. They both spent six weeks in a hospital bed recovering from radiation burns suffered from being in hyperspace. Toward the end of their stay in hospital, Ed is moved, by means unknown to him, to the year 2749.

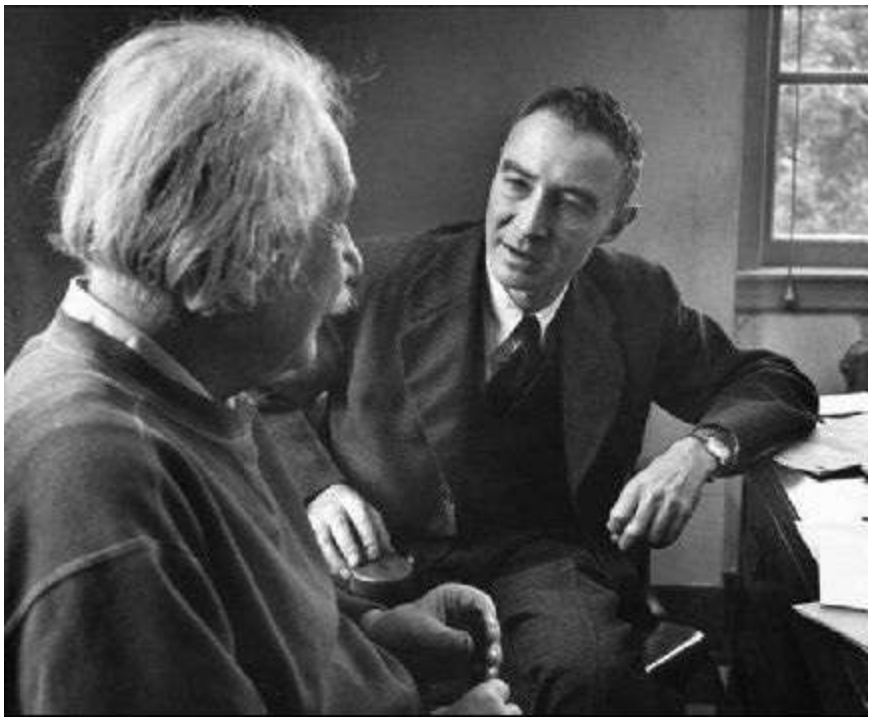
2751: After two years, Ed goes back to the year 2137.

Protocol One
The Need to Study Expolitics as a Serious Academic Discipline

The need to develop the disciplined area of study for *Exopolitics* the way we did for Exo-biology.
- An international panel of inquiry needs to be established.
- *Exopolitics* should be taught as an academic discipline in colleges and universities as part of the social sciences department.

The Discipline of Exopolitics

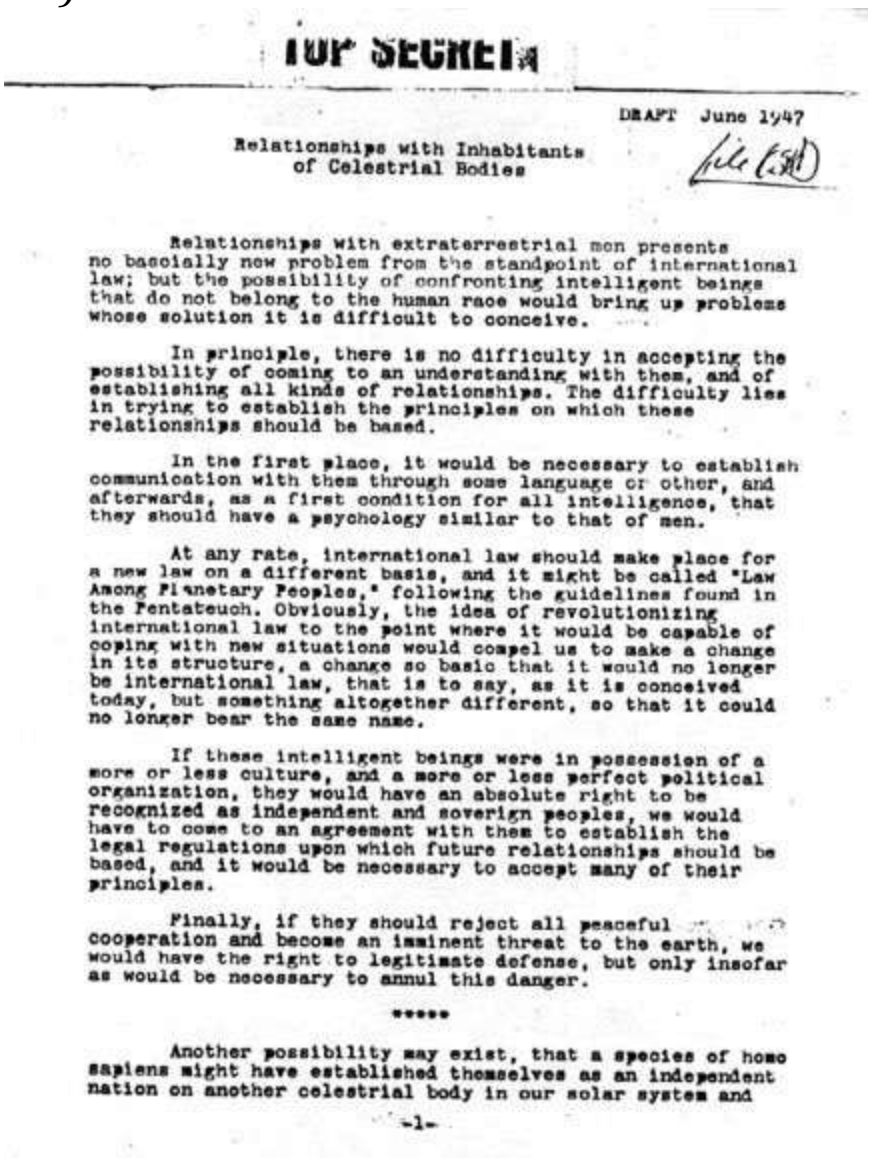
"Relationships with Inhabitants of Celestrial Bodies" MJ-12 draft document by Professor Albert Einstein (Princeton University) and Dr. J. Robert Oppenheimer (Director of Advanced Studies, Princeton, New Jersey).
www.majesticdocuments.com/documents/pre1948.php



Pictured: Professor Albert Einstein and Dr. J. Robert Oppenheimer.

As part of the compiled, Majestic-12 documents leaked to Tim Cooper and studied by the father son team of Ryan and Bob Wood, this important document completely supports our case for developing "intelligent" protocols and "a public, as well as political policy" for contact. No one more than Albert Einstein and was privy to the Truth. No one more than Einstein and Oppenheimer could foresee a governmental cover-up and no one more than they would be more fascinated with the idea of alien visitation. This document draft of June 1947 was ironically to reflect what was to happen one month later in July 1947 in Roswell, New Mexico. It is worth studying the entire draft which can be seen on Ryan Wood's website because it is powerful and suggests that these men felt a burden of responsibility to establish protocols for possible "future contact." In a document draft officially entitled "Relationship with Inhabitants of Celestrial Bodies," Albert Einstein and Robert Oppenheimer suggest a new international law should be

established called *"law" among Planetary Peoples. If these people had their own cultures and laws then we humans would need to accept many of their principles. But also if they reject peaceful cooperation and become an imminent threat to earth, then we would have a right to legitimately defend ourselves. Now we come to the problem of determining what to do if the inhabitants of celestrial bodies or extraterrestrial biological entities (EBE) desire to settle here."*



TOP SECRET

DRAFT June 1947

Relationships with Inhabitants
of Celestrial Bodies

Relationships with extraterrestrial men presents no basically new problem from the standpoint of international law; but the possibility of confronting intelligent beings that do not belong to the human race would bring up problems whose solution it is difficult to conceive.

In principle, there is no difficulty in accepting the possibility of coming to an understanding with them, and of establishing all kinds of relationships. The difficulty lies in trying to establish the principles on which these relationships should be based.

In the first place, it would be necessary to establish communication with them through some language or other, and afterwards, as a first condition for all intelligence, that they should have a psychology similar to that of men.

At any rate, international law should make place for a new law on a different basis, and it might be called "Law Among Planetary Peoples," following the guidelines found in the Pentateuch. Obviously, the idea of revolutionizing international law to the point where it would be capable of coping with new situations would compel us to make a change in its structure, a change so basic that it would no longer be international law, that is to say, as it is conceived today, but something altogether different, so that it could no longer bear the same name.

If these intelligent beings were in possession of a more or less culture, and a more or less perfect political organization, they would have an absolute right to be recognized as independent and soverign peoples, we would have to come to an agreement with them to establish the legal regulations upon which future relationships should be based, and it would be necessary to accept many of their principles.

Finally, if they should reject all peaceful cooperation and become an imminent threat to the earth, we would have the right to legitimate defense, but only insofar as would be necessary to annul this danger.

*****

Another possibility may exist, that a species of homo sapiens might have established themselves as an independent nation on another celestrial body in our solar system and

-1-

evolved culturely indenpendently from ours. Obviously, this possibility depends on many circumstances, whose conditions cannot yet be foreseen. However, we can make a study of the basis on which such a thing might have occurred.

In the first place, living conditions on these bodies lets say the moon, or the planet Mars, would have to be such as to permit a stable, and to a certain extent, independent life, from an economic standpoint. Much has been speculated about the possibilities for life existing outside of our atmosphere and beyond, always hypothetically, and there are those who go so far as to give formulas for the creation of an artificial atmosphere on the moon, which undoubtedly have a certain scientific foundation, and which may one day come to light. Lets assume that magnesium silicates on the moon may exist and contain up to 13 per cent water. Using energy and machines brought to the moon, perhaps from a space station, the rocks could be broken up, pulverized, and then backed to drive off the water of crystallization. This could be collected and then decomposed into hydrogen and oxygen, using an electric current or the short wave radiation of the sun. The oxygen could be used for breathing purposes; the hydrogen might be used as a fuel.

In any case, if no existence is possible on celestrial bodies except for enterprises for the exploration of their natural riches, with a continuous interchange of the men who work on them, unable to establish themselves there indefinitely and be able to live isolated life, independence will never take place.

*****

Now we come to the problem of determining what to do if the inhabitants of celestrial bodies, or extraterrestrial biological entities (EBE) desire to settle here.

1. If they are politically organized and possess a certain culture similar to our own, they may be recognized as a independent people. They could consider what degree of development would be required on earth for colonizing.

2. If they consider our culture to be devoid of political unity, they would have the right to colonize. Of course, this colonization cannot be conducted on classic lines.

A superior form of colonizing will have to be conceived, that could be a kind of tutelage, possibly through the tacit approval of the United Nations. But would the United Nations legally have the right of allowing such tutelage over us in such a fashion?

(a) Although the United Nations is an international organization, there is no doubt that it would have no right of tutelage, since its domain does not extend beyond relationships between its members. It would have the right to intervene only if the relationships of a member nation with a celestrial body affected another member nation with an extraterrestrial people is beyond the domain of the United Nations. But if these relationships entailed a conflict with another member nation, the United Nations would have the right to intervene.

(b) If the United Nations were a supra-national organization, it would have competency to deal with all problems related to extraterrestrial peoples. Of course, even though it is merely an international organization, it could have this competence if its member states would be willing to recognize it.

*****

It is difficult to predict what the attitude of international law will be with regard to the occupation by celestrial peoples of certain locations on our planet, but the only thing that can be foreseen is that there will be a profound change in traditional concepts.

We cannot exclude the possibility that a race of extraterrstrial people more advanced technologically and economically may take upon itself the right to occupy another celestrial body. How, then, would this occupation come about?

1. The idea of exploitation by one celestrial state would be rejected, they may think it would be advisable to grant it to all others capable of reaching another celestrial body. But this would be to maintain a situation of privilege for these states.

2. The division of a celestrail body into zones and the distribution of them among other celestrial states. This would present the problem of distribution. Moreover, other celestrial states would be deprived of the possibility of owning an area, or if they were granted one it would involve complicated operations.

3. Indivisible co-sovereignty, giving each celestrial state the right to make whatever use is most convenient to its interests, independently of the others. This would create a situation of anarchy, as the strongest one would win out in the end.

4. A moral entity? The most feasible solution it

seem would be this one, submitt an agreement providing for the peaceful absorbtion of a celestrial race(s) in such a manner that our culture would remain intact with guarantees that their presence not be revealed.

Actually, we do not believe it necessary to go that far. It would merely be a matter of internationalizing celestrial peoples, and creating an international treaty instrument preventing exploitation of all nations belonging to the United Nations.

*****

Occupation by states here on earth, which has lost all interest for international law, since there were no more res nullius territories, is beginning to regain all its importance in cosmic international law.

Occupation consists in the appropriation by a state of res nullius.

Until the last century, occupation was the normal means of acquiring sovereignty over territories, when explorations made possible the discovery of new regions, either uninhabited or in an elementary state of civilization.

The imperialist expansion of the states came to an end with the end of regions capable of being occupied, which have now been drained from the earth and exist only in interplanetary space, where the celestrial states present new problems.

*****

Res nullius is something that belongs to nobody such as the moon. In international law a celestrial body is not subject to the sovereignty of any state is considered res nullius. If it could be established that a celestrial body within our solar system such as our moon was, or is occupied by another celestrial race, there could be no claim of res nullius by any state on earth (if that state should decide in the future to send explorers to lay claim to it). It would exist as res communis, that is that all celestrial states have the same rights over it.

*****

And now to the final question of whether the presence of celestrial astroplanes in our atmosphere is a direct result of our testing atomic weapons?

The presence of unidentified space craft flying in our atmosphere (and possibly maintaining orbits about our planet) is now, however, accepted as fact by our military.

On every question of whether the United States will continue testing of fission bombs and develop fusion devices (hydrogen bombs), or reach an agreement to disarm and the exclusion of weapons that are too destructive, with the exception of chemical warfare, on which, by some miracle we cannot explain, an agreement has been reached, the lamentations of philosophers, the efforts of politicians, and the conferences of diplomats have been doomed to failure and have accomplished nothing.

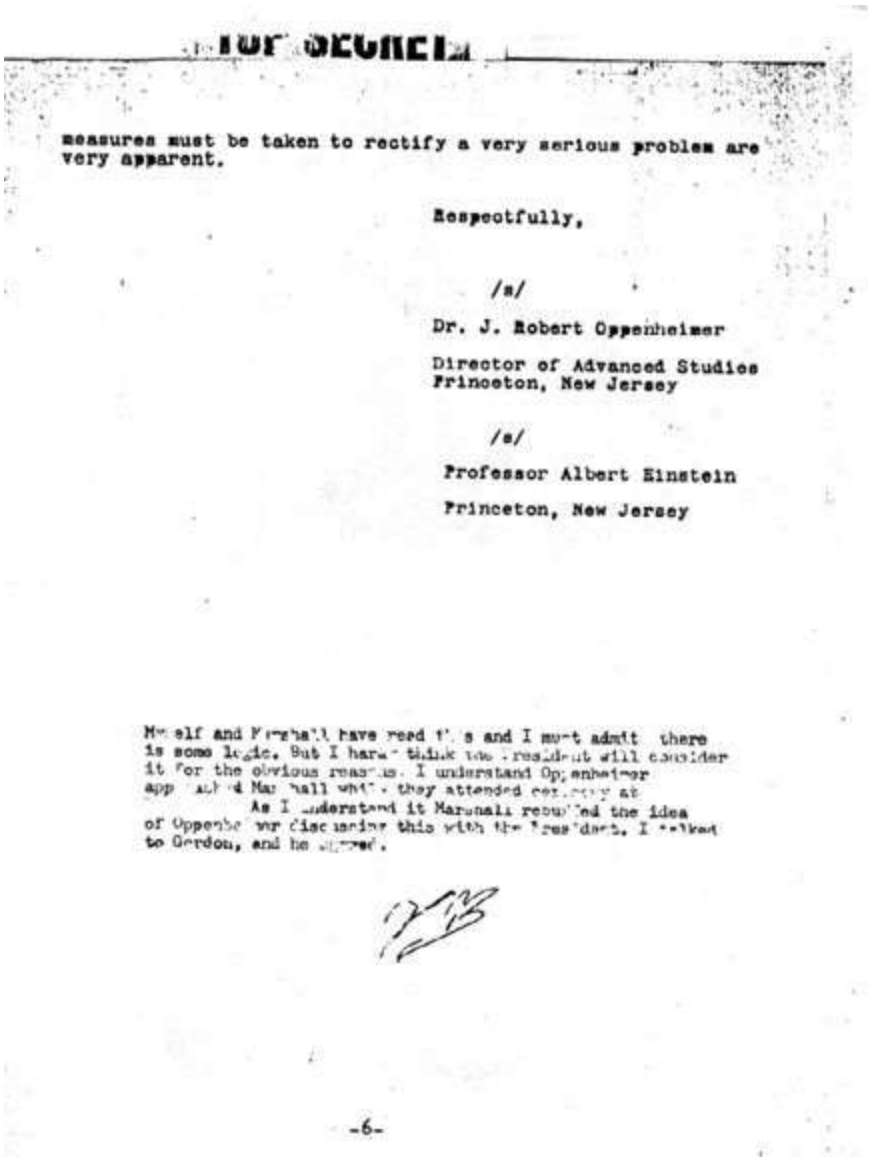
The use of the atomic bomb combined with space vehicles poses a threat on a scale which makes it absolutely necessary to come to an agreement in this area. With the appearance of unidentified space vehicles (opinions are sharply divided as to their origin) over the skies of Europe and the United States has sustained an ineradical fear, an anxiety about security, that is driving the great powers to make an effort to find a solution to the threat.

Military strategists foresee the use of space craft with nuclear warheads as the ultimate weapon of war. Even the deployment of artificial satellites for intelligence gathering and target selection is not far off. The military importance of space vehicles, satellites as well as rockets is indisputable, since they project war from the horizontal plane to the vertical plane in its fullest sense. Attack no longer comes from an exclusive direction, nor from a determined country, but from the sky, with the practical impossibility of determining who the aggressor is, how to intercept the attack, or how to effect immediate reprisals. These problems are compounded further by identification. How does the air defense radar operator identify , or more precisely, classify his target?

At present, we can breath a little easier knowing that slow moving bombers are the mode of delivery of atomic bombs that can be detected by long-range early warning radar. But what do we do in lets say ten years from now? When artificial satellites and missiles find their place in space, we must consider the potential threat that unidentified space craft pose. One must consider the fact that mis-identification of these space craft for a intercontenental missile in a re-entry phase of flight could lead to accidental nuclear war with horrible consequences.

Lastly, we should consider the possibility that our atmospheric tests of late could have influenced the arrival of celestrial scrutiny. They could have been curious or even alarmed by such activity (and rightly so, for the Russians would make every effort to observe and record such tests).

In conclusion, it is our professional opinion based on submitted data that this situation is extremely perilous, and



TOP SECRET

measures must be taken to rectify a very serious problem are very apparent.

Respectfully,

/s/

Dr. J. Robert Oppenheimer

Director of Advanced Studies
Princeton, New Jersey

/s/

Professor Albert Einstein

Princeton, New Jersey

Myself and Marshall have read this and I must admit there is some logic. But I have to think the President will consider it for the obvious reasons. I understand Oppenheimer approached Marshall while they attended ceremony at As I understand it Marshall rebuffed the idea of Oppenheimer discussing this with the President. I talked to Gordon, and he agreed.

-6-

It is curious here they use the EBE abbreviation for extraterrestrial Biological Entities. So I asked researcher Ryan Wood why was this term EBE was used in this draft from June 1947 since I believed this term was first coined for the entities in the Roswell crash that happened later in July 1947. He reminded me that the Cape Girardeau crash in 1941 had these beings aboard and probably the government knew about them already. Ironically, the suggestion was made by Robert Oppenheimer to submit this draft to the President in June 1947

but rebutted by a handwritten memo (seen in the draft) written by Dr. Vannevar Bush who was against it. There were many people, then, who suggested that we establish protocols for either accepting these "alien cultures" or for hiding this reality as early as this. Einstein-Oppenheimer also suggest:

"If it were a "moral entity? The most feasible solution it seems would be this one. Submitt an agreement for the peaceful absorption of a celestial race(s) in such a manner that our culture will remain intact with the guarantees that their presence not be revealed."

Is this what started this cover-up, one asks? Here is how Steven Bassett of PRG sees this scenario. "The Paradigm Clock, created and published by PRG in 1998 to track the proximity to a formal announcement by the United States Government confirming an extraterrestrial presence engaging the human race, has been reset to 11:59:45––fifteen seconds to midnight. Such an announcement is formally referred to as *Disclosure* and would mark the end of a 59-year truth embargo imposed by federal authorities. Midnight on the Paradigm Clock is *Disclosure*. According to PRG Executive Director, Stephen Bassett, "Due to extraordinary circumstances primarily pertaining but not limited to the United States, a window of opportunity has opened for a *Disclosure* event to take place. This window should last through the November election and may remain open or possibly close depending upon the outcome of the election." He further added, "I believe this to be the best opportunity to get past this very difficult transition in human history since the truth embargo was initially imposed in 1947. "The previous setting for the Paradigm Clock was 11:58:45 on March 8, 2004."
[www.paradigmclock.com/chronicleexplanations.html]

This reflects the urgency with which on April 4, 2006, Steven

Bassett, who is dedicated to full *disclosure* and who is creator of the X-Conference in Washington, D.C. posted this message. But this urgency is also reflected in the other sections of the Einstein-Oppenheimer document that has other concerns. The document suggests that the concept of res nullius which means nobody's residence and they state clearly "the moon belongs to no one!" So this addresses indirectly the US concept of bases on the moon and claiming the moon as property. They go on to ask *"the final question of whether the presence of Celestial Astroplanes in our atmosphere is a direct result of our testing of atomic weapons." The presence of Unidentified space craft flying in our atmosphere (and possibly maintaining orbits around our planet is now however accepted (is defacto) by our military… The use of the atomic bomb combined with space vehicles poses a threat on a scale that makes it absolutely necessary to come to an agreement in this area." They suggest that these nuclear tests have subjected Earth to celestial scrutiny and they add "rightfully so" and they add that ETs "could be curious and alarmed by such activity."* This is an understatement!

"A *Star Dreams Initiative* should develop interactive protocols, setting out the parameters of the project and appropriate proposals for outreach, contact, and public interest diplomacy. These would include interplanetary treaties establishing formal relations and detailing essential functions, such as fundamental declarations of principles governing rights, government ownership, and other key principles of space law, bans on space weapons and warfare in space, outer space exploration standards, security, technology transfer, and interplanetary immigration." Ironically, Einstein and Oppenheimer say:

"If the United Nations were a 'supra-United Nations' type organization, it would have competency to deal with all problems

related to extra-terrestrial people. Of course although it is merely an International organization, it could have this competence if its member states would be willing to recognize it." (page 3, part B)

Einstein and Oppenheimer *"suggest a new international law should be established among Planetary Peoples. If these people (ETS) had their own cultures and laws then we humans would need to accept many of their principles."* (June 1947 draft)

I recently met Lee Speigel, who graciously gave me photos of the U.N. resolution meetings (see below). He was responsible for organizing the Grenada resolution committee that introduced UFOs to the United Nations. He gathered the most important people of the time including Dr. J. Allen Hynek, Jacques Vallee, and astronaut Gordon Cooper. Lee is to be heralded as someone who took action to bring this phenomenon to world attention. Journalists like Lee make things happen, and we need more activists like him. Lee now writes for the *Huffington Post.*

Sir Eric M. Gairy, Prime Minister and Minister for External Affairs of the Caribbean Island nation of Grenada, spoke before the United Nations, General Assembly, Thirty-Third Session, 32nd Plenary Meeting, on Thursday, October 12, 1978. The key points of Sir Eric Gairy's U.N. speech that is relative to this article are here:

Article 182: "During our four years of membership in the United Nations we have raised many matters of importance, some of which have been considered innovative, others were current and regular but our views ushered in new thoughts about them, thoughts that aroused new vistas in an attempt to tackle traditional thought-patterns. And still further we have been introducing some very thought-provoking subjects of world importance and world concern, subjects considered by

some to be strange and extraneous, but which we feel are sufficiently important and significant to merit our constant articulation and review of them, however and whenever the opportunity permits. Permit me to refer to only a few: the question of women's rights, the universality of God, economic cruelty, the problems of man and his environment, disarmament, man and his material and spiritual behavior, the Bermuda Triangle, unidentified flying objects and extraterrestrial phenomena, decolonization and territorial integrity, human rights, and undue solace given to terrorists."

July 14, 1978 - Lee Speigel Brings UFOs to the U.N.

Under the guidance of WNBC Radio producer Lee Speigel (now a writer for AOL-Huffington Post Media Group), a group of military, scientific and psychological experts meets with U.N. Secretary-General Kurt Waldheim on July 14, 1978, to discuss their planned 1978 presentation to the U.N. Special Political Committee. Topic: the importance of establishing an international UFO study panel.

Clockwise from left: astronaut Gordon Cooper, astronomer Jacques Vallee, astronomer/astrophysicist Claude Poher, astronomer J. Allen Hynek, Grenada Prime Minister Sir Eric Gairy, Waldheim, Morton Gleisner of the Special Political Committee, Speigel, researcher Len Stringfield and University of Colorado psychologist David Saunders.

1978 UN UFO Presentation:

Following the UFO presentation of scientists and military notables at the United Nations on Nov. 27, 1978, a press conference was held. Pictured, left to right, nuclear physicist Stanton Friedman, presentation producer Lee Speigel, Grenada Ambassador Wellington Friday, Grenada Prime Minister Sir Eric Gairy, astronomer J. Allen Hynek, astronomer Jacques Vallee and Army Lt. Col Larry Coyne.

Pictured, left to right, nuclear physicist Stanton Friedman, presentation producer Lee Speigel, Grenada Ambassador Wellington Friday, Grenada Prime Minister Sir Eric Gairy and astronomer J. Allen Hynek.

It is reported that prior to returning home to Grenada, Sir Eric visited with President Jimmy Carter, during which they discussed their individual UFO sighting experiences and the pending U.N. resolution. It is also reported that Zbigniew Brzezinski attended this meeting. Sir Eric returned to New York City on March 12, 1979 to meet with the then Secretary General of the United Nations, Kurt Walheim. The official purpose of this meeting was to discuss the fact that on December 18, 1978, the United Nations General Assembly

voted to approve decision 33/426, inviting U.N. Member States *"to take appropriate steps to coordinate on a national level scientific research and investigation into extraterrestrial life, including unidentified flying objects, and to inform the Secretary-General of the observations, research and evaluation of such activities."* The United States was the sole U.N. member nation that unsuccessfully attempted to block that 1978 U.N. ET resolution.

Dr. Michael Salla, with his wife Angelika Whitecliff, created The *Exopolitics Institute* to address these concerns and policy issues. I am on the board of directors and am their international advisor since I lived in Rome, Italy and travel often throughout Europe. The *Exopolitics Institute* is dedicated to studying the key political actors, institutions and processes associated with credible evidence that extraterrestrial civilizations are visiting, monitoring or residing on Earth. The Institute supports the study and dissemination of information and technologies from 'whistleblowers' or 'private citizens' who claim to have physically interacted with extraterrestrials, or had access to covert military-corporate programs involving extraterrestrial technologies. The Institute promotes 'citizen diplomacy initiatives' for peaceful communications and interactions with extraterrestrial civilizations that evidence suggests are interacting with or monitoring humanity. The Institute seeks to prepare humanity for interacting with extraterrestrial civilizations whose existence is supported by credible evidence, and supports full public *disclosure* by government authorities of all evidence concerning the extraterrestrial presence. The Institute supports the vision of an interconnected global human society that interacts with extraterrestrial civilizations in a peaceful, harmonious and mutually respectful manner.

During the *Exopolitics Institute's* 2006 Hawaii conference, keynote speaker, former Canadian Minister of Defense Paul Hellyer, echoed our sentiments when he said:

"What are the consequences of the long-time cover-up of extraterrestrial intelligence and advanced technology?

"It appears that real government has passed from elected accountable representatives of the people, to an unelected, unaccountable elite group of senior government officials and industrial leaders, an 'Industrial Military Complex,' whose agenda is incompatible with the needs and desires of the population at-large. At least that is my unshakeable conviction. Evidence indicates that the survival of the planet as a reasonably friendly and hospitable environment is at stake, and that vested interests may be blocking plans to save it before it is too late. Even worse, the 'Military Industrial Complex' that General Dwight Eisenhower warned us about is creating and producing weapons systems designed to confront visitors from space and, in the process, is proceeding to a situation that could be a sure-fire recipe for a possible conflict. One hesitates to contemplate the unknown and potentially disastrous consequences. Only an early and complete disclosure of the truth can save us from our folly."

Einstein and Oppenheimer agree when they say: *"If military strategists are planning an attack with missiles with nuclear warheads coming from the sky which will be difficult to determine from whence they came. If they are mis-identified, it may cause a space war."*

Paul Hellyer, in my interview with him in February 2006, told me he was "deeply concerned because this cover-up involves serious policy issues for Canada and the world." Paul adds, "A recent book, *Majic Eyes Only*, by Ryan S. Wood, is equally compelling. Wood documents seventy-four UFO crashes from 1897 to the present. While the evidence is much

stronger in some of the cases than in others, there is more than enough to convince an unbiased reader that, as the dust jacket states, (1) UFOs have crashed on Earth; (2) governments have recovered and exploited these alien technology gifts; and (3) most disturbing to a democratic and free society: the alien secret is more important than constitutional or individual rights."

An Exopolitical Consideration and a Challenge for Researchers

I will pose the question of recognition of UFO sightings. After sixty years of serious back engineering of alien craft, we need to ask ourselves if what we are seeing in the skies is "our stuff" or "their stuff." What criteria do we use to decide this? For the answer to this, I went to two experienced authorities: one on UFOs and crash retrievals, and Clark McClelland, a NASA engineer who worked twenty-two years on all the Apollo missions.

McClelland told me that he was alerted that he would see these craft when he went to Belize on vacation in 1995. They were two flying saucers that flew one in the wake of the other. He has the incredible graphics on his website, www.stargate-chronicles.com.

Says McClelland, "Personally, I believe that the Onion Drive technology is flying in the skies of earth each day. I observed two over Belize in 1995 and two more about a month ago, over my town in Florida. Advanced weapons systems are developed about 20, 30 to 40 years prior to the release of such technology to the world public. The people on Earth have no knowledge of what advanced crafts are flying in the skies and are going to the Moon, Mars and beyond." (Clark C. McClelland, former Science Officer, Space Shuttle Fleet, Kennedy Space Center, Florida, 1958 to 1992.)

To Moon, Mars and beyond! Oh, Oh, Houston! We have a real problem here in 2012, with UFO sightings, because we civilians can't tell the difference. However, we know it is useless to invent more organizations to archive them. We have been doing that for years and we know the phenomena exist. We may be

recording our stuff that DOES go faster than the speed of light.

At conferences recently, I show astounding, close-up film footage of a craft coming out of a forest, doing two 360-degree turns in front of a cameraman, who has a video camera on a tripod, and then it jets off into the sunset at light speed. This place is Ponte di Giulio, in the Veneto region of Italy, near the NATO base of Aviano. That area is a military area where soldiers practice maneuvers and I do not think aliens were invited to visit and see the show.

The film footage was analyzed in Hollywood and the object on the screen is "real"; but real military or real alien is the question? Which? In this new decade of research we will have many more challenges like this. Ironically, those who see this footage argue to the death that it is alien because they love the idea of a close encounter like this.

I am convinced that some, if not most, of the craft we are seeing in 2012 are our own back-engineered, top-secret aircraft. I have an astounding interview with Ed Rothschild Fouche, who worked at Area 51, in my first book *Connecting the Dots: Making Sense of the UFO Phenomena*. He spoke about the triangular antigravity TR3B that is a back-engineered, triangular alien craft that can easily be mistaken for a UFO. Was the Belgium sighting the TR3B––and why would this aircraft be flown through a populated area, risking damage to civilians and villages? Many triangular craft have been seen, while they have been flight-tested over the Area 51 Nellis Ranges, by researchers and responsible citizens. Some say the Phoenix triangle craft, part of the Phoenix Lights phenomena, could also be exotic technology. Arizona Researcher, Jim Dilettoso, who examined the video and still photographs, does not agree. He says that Dr. Lynn Kitei, who filmed it, saw the orange "orbs" detach and attach themselves to this huge-shaped craft, which

was the size of several football fields. So we can assume this was a true UFO and most likely "their stuff," especially since flying a craft this size over the huge, populated area of Phoenix, Arizona, and to have so many amateur video camera operators film it, would be absurd.

Another case in point to examine might be the Rendlesham Forest, Bentwaters case. One NASA engineer told me that was probably the TR3B advanced aircraft checking the security of the US nuclear arsenal in England. But from the witness testimony of Larry Warren and Lt. Col. Charles Halt, it is obvious that the craft was having flying difficulties and the military men were terrified at this incident. Most of them were also intensely debriefed right after it happened. If this was our surveillance craft, why was the head commander of the Bentwaters base not warned? For the answer, I went to Sergeant Clifford Stone, who worked on crash retrievals with recovery projects Moon Dust and Blue Fly, told me in a telephone conversation on January 2, 2000, that he was in Germany at the time and the Bentwaters case was a real UFO case.

Protocol Two
Our Stuff or Their Stuff? That is the Question.

We need to develop clarity about our back-engineered alien technology, otherwise, we may be shooting at ourselves in our own back-engineered crafts and simulating a space war. We need some guidelines so we are not misidentifying UFOs.

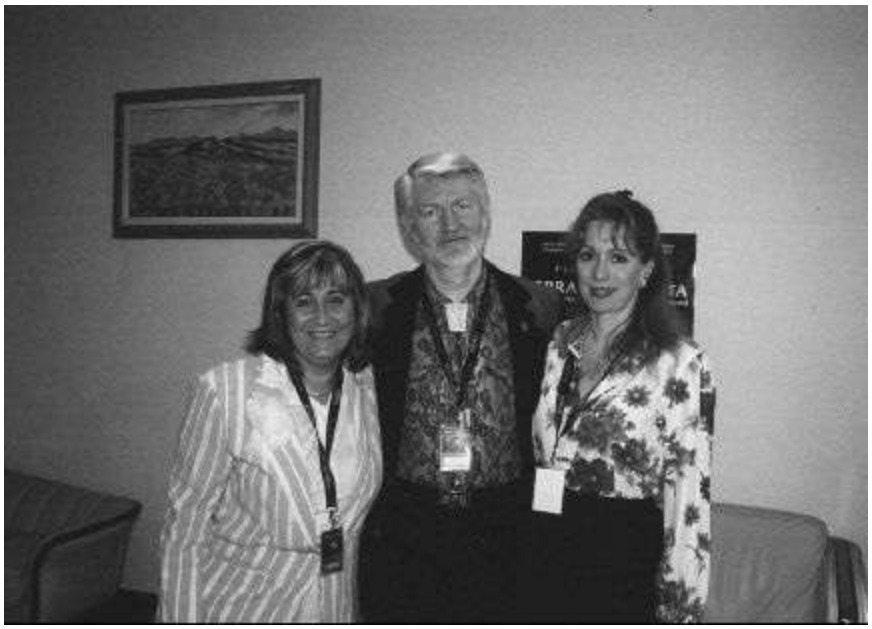
- Who does our advanced technology benefit?
- What is the military and Industrial complex up to and where are the "black budgets" going?
- Will governments choose to disclose the truth or are we doomed to play this "game forever?"

Our Stuff or Their Stuff? Back-engineered Technology

NASA and Disclosure: Interview with Clark McClelland

The latest NASA film footage out on DVD is outstanding and indisputable

In Jose Escamilla's documentary film *The Greatest Story Ever Denied*, there is visible proof of unidentified objects in space, artificial structures on the moon and globe-like light spheres around the STS Space Shuttle missions. Those famous intelligent "balls of light," for which I named this book, are now visible. NASA knows and there are those in NASA who wish to tell the truth as well as those who want to maintain the "cover-up"!



Pictured: Paola Harris, Richard Hoagland, and Dr. Robin Falkov in Italy.

Again, in his brilliant speech in Greece, Mr. Come Carpentier says:

"There is now a large number of declassified, or leaked but verified, official reports from various Air Forces, Navies, Armies and international military structures, such as NATO, NORAD et al, about encounters, incidents, chases, dogfights and confrontations with alien spacecraft exhibiting properties far superior to any available in the conventional arsenals of earthly powers. For example, there are detailed records about the 1967 Malmstrom missile shutdown (one among several cases) when, in 1967, visiting UFOs deactivated a number of Montana-based ICBM missiles in their underground silos. A surprisingly high number of military officers of several countries, including 3-star generals, air marshals and admirals, not to mention astronauts in the Apollo program (Russell Schweikart, Brian O'Leary, Buzz Aldrin and Scott Carpenter among others), have admitted publicly to having seen or been shown evidence of UFOs that, in their best judgment, could not have been of human, terrestrial origin."

One such ground crew astronaut who has been very vocal about his experiences working for twenty-two years at NASA KSC, Florida, is Clark McClelland. He is currently preparing his own book and I thank him for sharing this material with me. He speaks from first hand knowledge.

Interview with Clark McClelland about his conversation with Senator Barry Goldwater at Kennedy Space Center, June 16, 1969

Clark C. McClelland, former ScO, Space Shuttle Fleet, Kennedy Space Center, Florida from 1958 to 1992

Paola: You had several assignments at Kennedy Space Center. That is a beautiful photograph you sent me, of you after the launch of STS-48 shuttle mission. Can you name some of your job titles?

McClelland: My titles at the Cape were: Structural Designer, Aerospace Engineer–Mission Planner, Aerospace Engineer–Launch Operations, Technical Assistant to the Apollo Program Manager, Mission Operations Monitor in the LCC (Launch Operations Center).

Paola: Clark, can you name some astronauts that knew of the alien presence and with whom you spoke personally?

McClelland: Ellison Onizuka, who saw two, what appeared to be, aliens; Dr. Story Musgrave––'The Demonstration,' comments. Comments by Dr. Von Braun in 'Chasing Juno.' Comments in 'Interfering with Atlas' and the letter to me from USAF Major Mansmann. Look at my website for these articles and in the Those Who Know section for the comments made to me by astronauts Deke Slayton and Gordon Cooper and read

what Dr. Edgar Mitchell has said.

Paola: You once told me you talked about UFOs with Senator Barry Goldwater, of Arizona. Can you tell us about it?

McClelland: The date of July 16, 1969, was the day of the launch of Apollo 11 and the initial kick-off for the first landing of the human race on our neighbor, the Moon. The global importance of this major historic event was very evident at the Kennedy Space Center, Florida. It was Moon Shot Day! Many famous people from all over the world gathered in the VIP launch-viewing area, near the Apollo LCC (Launch Control Center). The security was at its highest level, with VIP guests present from every nation on earth. One guest was a person whom I had supported during his political career: Senator Barry M. Goldwater of Arizona. He had been the Republican Presidential candidate in 1964, running against President Lyndon B. Johnson. He had lost by a wide margin but we, in Florida, had delivered him a victory in Brevard County, Florida and the Space Port area and had pride in ourselves regarding that minor accomplishment. In 1968, Goldwater won back his Senatorial seat in Arizona.

Pictured: Clark McClelland and Barry Goldwater, 1968.

Paola: But Senator Goldwater was also a military man.

McClelland: Senator Barry M. Goldwater was a former Major General in the United States Army Air Corp, wanting to be a fighter pilot of a P-47 Thunderbolt and/or a P-51 Mustang aircraft, but was assigned to deliver various aircraft to combat areas. He had flown an estimated 160-plus other planes during his World War II and civilian years. I was also informed that he had been checked-out in an SR-71 Blackbird. That was very impressive to learn.

Paola: So, how was the photo taken?

McClelland: During the long countdown of the Saturn V Apollo 11 launch vehicle, I took a breakfast break from the LCC and walked to the nearby VIP guest-viewing site, in hopes of meeting Senator Goldwater. As I scanned the numerous people gathered, I asked one of our security guards if he was aware of the location of Goldwater. He pointed his finger to an open field nearby saying, "Do you see that guy over there, setting up his camera tripod, Mac? That's Senator Goldwater." I had my camera around my neck in hopes of having a photo opportunity with the Senator. I strolled across the crabgrass turf, as he was setting up his personal camera. I was surprised he was alone, except for a half dozen other guests that were nearby, also setting up their cameras. I introduced myself and he responded with a polite greeting.

Paola: How did you ask him about UFOs and what did you find out?

McClelland: I seriously pondered my next question concerning UFOs and finally asked him if he would discuss the subject with me? I was surprised he had no Secret Service Agents or NASA Public Affairs personnel hovering around him. I explained my

position at KSC and my being the NICAP Unit-3 Director for Major Donald E. Keyhoe at KSC. He had met Keyhoe in DC, years before. He approved our discussion on the UFO subject and we began our exchange of information. I began by saying it was obvious he had a deep, abiding interest in UFOs and possible visits of alien races to Earth. He said, "That is accepted fact in Washington, and especially at the Pentagon, young man."

I had some understanding of his alleged statements regarding UFOs in the past and brought up the popular story of his effort to gain entry into a special storage area at Wright-Patterson AFB, which purportedly had alien artifacts in it. He said, "Yes, that's the main event concerning me and UFOs. I was under the impression that a US Senator, with a past as a Major General in the US Army Air Corp and a member of the US Senate Select Committee on Intelligence for many years, would carry some weight in my allowances to enter such an area of military secrecy. I was rudely awakened to reality, very swiftly, when I was denied passage. It had me angry enough to discuss it with a personal friend of mine in the military and I inquired why my position in the US Senate had no such allowance? My friend, General Curtis LeMay, Chairman of the Military Joint Chiefs of Staff at the Pentagon, very angrily told me that I had no need to know. He gave me a lot of hell about my activities at Wright-Patterson. He threatened to end our friendship for life! My God, Mac, that surprised the hell out of me!"

LeMay added, "You stay clear of our mutual friend Butch too (meaning General William "Butch" Blanchard). His having been at Roswell (later Walker) Army Air Base and the 509th will not gain you any favor for knowledge of that Roswell crash claim, Mac." Goldwater said, "Butch Blanchard was also a very valued friend of mine, since World War II. He was the person who announced that a disc had crashed near Roswell in 1947. This

cussing out did awaken me to one fact: that the UFO situation is the highest level of national secrecy. Much higher than the H-Bomb was and more than anything else that is known within the Pentagon, FBI, CIA, DIA, NSA, etc. That is, nothing is higher security than aliens being here on this planet. Then I realized Curtis was correct and I never again approached him on the subject. That seemed to prove to me that UFOs were a fact, and do exist. But, are they all aliens? I highly suspect a majority are! Hell, they are no doubt far ahead of our level of intelligence. The United States Air Force knows the truth, but will they ever reveal it to this nation?"

I quickly said, "Yes, Senator, some UFOs sighted, I have learned through the ONI, are alien." His eyes brightened up and he showed surprise, saying, "Mac, how would you know that as a fact and I was denied the truth?" I said, "Senator, I was here, at KSC, and had also been at Cape Canaveral, since the start of our national space program. With all due respect for your great accomplishments, sir, you were not. I've heard and seen things that, without any doubt, proved to me that UFOs and star races exist."

I said, "Congress is not made aware of secrets of this caliber. The Pentagon controls such disclosures." Goldwater said, "Yes, I get your point. You were, and are, on the cutting edge of technology, Mac. Hell, you have seen events I can only dream about!" I replied, "Yes, sir, more than you know!"

Paola: How much do you think Senator Goldwater really knew?

McClelland: I tested the Senator with another question. I asked him if he was, at that time, aware of the fact that several former German scientists were assigned to Wright Field. He said, "No, Mac, I was not." Then one of the nearby launch viewers came close to our location and I stopped the discussion. The man

wanted to say hello and shake the hand of Senator Goldwater. Following his departure, I continued, saying, “Those Germans were at Wright since post-World War II and assigned to reverse-engineer certain retrieved hardware that was suspected to be of alien origin. They accomplished that assignment of the object that crashed in Kecksburg, Pennsylvania. It was taken to Wright Field. Senator Goldwater said, “Yes, I recall that incident. What was it? Do you know?” I replied, “Yes, sir, it was a Soviet failed mission to Venus in 1965. It was not alien, Senator. The public was lead to believe it was a UFO. Far easier to explain than a missile from the USSR hitting within the USA.” Goldwater agreed.

Goldwater asked if I was aware who the Germans were. I replied, “Yes, one was Siegfried Knemeyer, the former head of the German RLM (The Reichsluftfahrtministerium), the Third Reich’s Air Ministry for aircraft development for the Luftwaffe. He died in 1979, in the USA. Another was Dr. Hans Amtmann, an expert in vertical take-off aircraft. One other I am familiar with is Dr. Alexander Lippisch, who was more well known and a pioneer in tailless aircraft, the US Delta wing fighter, the F-102A Delta Dagger and an advanced design of a ground-effect flying boat. I’m almost certain these men also did a reverse engineering on the object that crashed near Roswell, New Mexico.” I could see that what I was telling the Senator may have had his mind in a spin. So, I slowed down.

He continued the conversation saying, “Mac, you work in one of the most secretive and important areas of our national security, on the cutting edge of space science, and are, no doubt, aware of much that has happened and is happening during our missions into space.” I confirmed his statement, saying I was also part of an ONI (Office of Naval Intelligence) Unit at Patrick Air Force Base, South of the Cape. He was

surprised to hear that fact. He said, “So, you are Naval Intelligence, young man?” I said, “Well, yes sir, but, only one member.” He continued, making certain none of the people nearby was within listening distance, “Now, may I ask you what you have heard or seen here?” I joked with him and said, “Do you have a need to know, sir?” and we both laughed.

Paola: This is obvious, Clark. This is the standard phrase! ‘The need to know.’ Then you took this photo?

McClelland: I asked the man if he would take a photo of Goldwater and me together. I asked approval of the Senator and he gave his OK. Following the photo being taken, I thanked both the people. This is the photo I sent you during the launching of Apollo 11; Man’s first landing on the moon.

Paola: What kind of conversation did you have about ‘Operation Paperclip’ and the German scientists? You said you knew some?

McClelland: Senator Goldwater asked me, “What’s RLM?” I told him it was the German Air Ministry that created the various planes, like the Messerschmitt, Junker, and may have influenced the V-1 and V-2 rockets at Peenemunde. I continued, “Two other Paperclip scientists at Wright Field are Dr. Hans Amtmann and Dr. Alexander Lippisch. I believe all three are still at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base, Senator. Perhaps you can try and contact them there?” The Senator quickly replied, “No, not after that experience with General LeMay, Mac!” I said, “Senator, you are aware of the military rivalry to gain the upper hand over other areas of the United States military, which has been an on-going practice throughout our national history?” He replied, “Yes, I am, having been associated with the military budgets in the Senate.” I continued, saying, “There was, and still

is, a great rivalry between the US military services and since the USAF and the US Army ABMA were playing the same game between them at Wright Field, the AMC (Air Material Command) Foreign Technology Division of the USAF had captured alien technology and the US Navy wanted it shared with the ONI (Office of Naval Intelligence). Another habitual US Military squabble. Can you imagine the Soviet Union having such squabbles? Not on your life! Admirals and Generals would have been marched to a wall and executed. In fact, Stalin did just that to several of his military officers." Goldwater agreed.

I continued to explain the film, "As we all watched the ONI film, it described the sighting of a huge 400-foot, or larger, saucer-shaped object that was encountered by a US Navy R7V-2 four-engine Constellation aircraft over the Atlantic Ocean. As many as 40 military personnel and aircrew observed it as it approached the aircraft and appeared to be observing the Navy plane. It was at an altitude of about nineteen to twenty thousand feet and, at first, the object was mistaken for being a gathering of many ships below the plane, due to its size when initially, and earlier, viewed far below the aircraft by the navigator and commander of the plane." I said, "Senator Goldwater, I cannot recall the names of the flight crew." He said, "Just continue with the incident, Mac. It's very interesting and I was not aware it had happened." I continued, "They all witnessed it and described it as having a large, illuminated outer ring since it, and what some said may have been other craft below, were possibly seen. As the large object approached the plane, at about 1,000 yards, those aboard were mystified and frightened. The crew later said it was a huge, saucer-shaped metallic machine."

Goldwater asked, "Mac, did they show photographs of it in the ONI film?" I told him I was not aware that a film was

exposed during the actual incident, so, no, I did not see any depiction of the UFO. If any UFO film was taken at all, it was apparently under Top Secret classification and not shown in the ONI film. Some comments made by the crew in the film were that they all considered the huge object was "intelligently" controlled. They also said that no living creature, etc., was seen. They added that the craft's speed, from when it climbed from near sea level to their aircraft altitude, was estimated to be about 1,400 to 2,000+ knots in a brief time lapse of seven to eight seconds.

The Senator said, "That's astounding, Mac! What else was said?" I continued, "The Navy aircraft commander radioed ahead to the Gander Air Force Base control tower and asked if their radar was identifying any other object near his R7V-2. The tower control officer said, 'Yes, a larger object and in close proximity to the Navy plane.' Sir, they verified that a gigantic craft was on their radar!" He replied, "Mac, I was not aware of that case! I will try and pursue it when I return to Washington." I replied, "Contact Don Keyhoe or Richard Hall, his deputy." I continued with the sighting saying, "The US Navy Flight Commander was asked by the USAF interviewer at Gander, during their individual and group debriefing, did they see any indication of life? His reply was, 'No, but it was intelligently controlled––and my crew and I are all witnesses to that fact!" That object was not remotely controlled; something inside of it was in control! The interrogator would not discuss what the Gander Radar had recorded and refused to allow the Navy to review it. The Navy Commander asked the Air Force Officer, "What is the USAF up to now? You people say UFOs do not exist; what the hell did we see if they don't exist?' The USAF Officer said, "Sorry, we cannot answer any of your questions!"

On May 29, 1998, Barry Goldwater passed away in Phoenix, Arizona. Perhaps he now knows the secrets of that “secret area” at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base and is now aware of other races among the stars.

Interview with Apollo 14 Astronaut Dr. Edgar Mitchell

It came as a surprise that we in *Exopolitics* heralded the speech of Mr. Come Carpentier given in Greece at a conference. He is a statesman, not an Ufologist, not a scientist, and he says, and I quote from *The Case for Exopolitics: Ushering in a Cosmic Dialogue*:

"*Exopolitics, insofar as it concerns the issue of mankind's contacts with intelligent non-human life forms originating outside our planet, has an already long history. Since Antiquity, human beings have pondered this existential question: "Are we alone in the universe?" and have sought to answer it according to their experience, intuition or imagination, with fear, hope, humor or incredulity."*

We can see in this speech that Come Carpentier has done his homework when he says:

"Some of the many covert government projects dedicated to the UFO subject in North America were projects, Twinkle, Ponce, Grudge, Moondust, and Bluefly. Magnet (in Canada, from 1950 to 1954, which led to the creation of a 'flying saucer' detection station at Shirley Bay near Ottawa, funded by the Canadian Federal Government from 1952 to1954). Kenneth Arnold mentions Project Saucer in his book with Ray Palmer called The Coming of the Saucers. These and other programs were created for monitoring, reporting on and capturing or retrieving unidentified craft. These programs were at times controlled by the CIA, NSA, ONI, Air Force intelligence, etc. (more than 1000 pages of official documents have been released under FOIA regarding projects Moondust and Bluefly)."

Mr. Carpentier names them all and talks about the over-abundance of testimony, especially from astronauts:

"A surprisingly high number of military officers of several countries, including three-star generals, air marshals and admirals, not to mention astronauts in the Apollo program (Russell Schweikart, Brian O'Leary, Buzz Aldrin, Scott Carpenter among others) have admitted publicly to having seen, or been shown, evidence of UFOs that, in their best judgment, could not have been of human, terrestrial origin…

"NASA astronaut Edgar Mitchell's statement to the Press in 1999.

"Mitchell, a member of the Disclosure Project has acknowledged publicly that he knows of a 'UFO-cover-up' engineered and kept by what he calls a "cabal of insiders" within the U.S. Government. An indirect confirmation has been given by New Mexico Governor, Bill Richardson, who recently officially asked the Federal Government to release the true facts pertaining to the Roswell 1947 episode, so far without success."

Ironically, the following interview with Dr. Edgar Mitchell was done in Roswell, New Mexico on July 5, 2004. Dr. Mitchell is a personal friend, one of those wise men with unconventional wisdom because he surpasses the confining boundaries of scientific research when he discusses "Quantum Cosmology!" He is honest and wants the planet to progress on its evolutionary path and he does include that "paranormal phenomena" that Allen Hynek once told me not to overlook.

Interview with Dr. Edgar Mitchell
Apollo 14 Astronaut
Roswell, New Mexico

July 5, 2004

"I think I've reached the point that I'm convinced enough of the reality of the ET presence and I'm not going to deny it and shy away from it…. It is time to open this up to the public." ––
Astronaut Edgar Mitchell, Apollo 14

Pictured: Paola Harris and Edgar Mitchell, 2004.

Paola: It is a pleasure to see you here in Roswell. I think that you said that you grew up in this area. I think you said that you lived here when you were about 3 to 13 years old?

Mitchell: I lived here from when I was five until I went off to College. We had a family business in the valley. It was between Roswell and Artesia.

Paola: Friends talked you into coming to speak here at the UFO museum?

Mitchell: I resisted for a long time.

Paola: Did you resist because it was connected with the UFO

phenomenon?

Mitchell: No. I think I've reached the point that I'm convinced enough of the reality of the ET presence and I'm not going to deny it and shy away from it. I don't get into it in detail. That is not my area.

Paola: I know that your area is more the metaphysical.

Mitchell: Well, I think it is an interaction there. Particularly since there does seem to be a non-local communication or mental tie here with some of these functions, whether they are real or not, I don't know.

Paola: Can I ask you, why is it they pick you of all the astronauts? In the media you have been selected as one who represents the astronauts' testimony as to this UFO reality, although you mentioned you never saw one in space. Gordon Cooper talks a lot more about it in his book Leap of Faith. So why you? Is it by talking about the metaphysical they have attached you to the weirdness factor?

Mitchell: I think it was the personal connection, since I had personal contacts in this area. I think it is my credibility as a scientist. I am very, very incredulous about what I see. I can't throw caveats in. I don't make blanket statements. Although my experience is not first hand experience, I have become a spokesman for my colleagues who did have first hand experience. I am very clear about all of these things and I am very clear about where our lack of knowledge is. What is the frontier? What are the unknowns? What are the parameters that we don't understand? I think this gives me a lot of credibility.

Paola: What advice would you give those serious researchers that want an answer and, let's say, dream of harmony with

cosmic cultures? What advice would you give them?

Mitchell: We are dealing with a difficult process here. The main problem is that we, as an Earth civilization, have not come to understand ourselves; see ourselves in a cosmic sense at all. We are still very provincial. We fight over religion. In my opinion, fundamentalist Christians are just as bad as fundamentalist Islam and, at the very core, neither religion is like that. In the inner core of both of them, these religions talk about qualities like Love and Brotherhood.

Paola: You are saying that there are more similarities than differences?

Mitchell: Of course. It's the cultural differences. It is not an intrinsic difference. It is like I said in my talk last night: "the transcendent experience is common to every culture in the world" and the transcendent experience is Brotherly Love, Nature, Harmony, the Unity, and cultures, in trying to define it, try to define an external deity as opposed to the process.

Paola: It is easier that way because you don't have any responsibility. I guess a proverb could be: You can blame it on the devil or God. It is a lack of taking responsibility for who we are.

Mitchell: Well, that's right, and our ignorance, and it is based on the egos we have. It is the unwillingness to go beyond ego. Transcendence gets you beyond ego. If you go beyond ego, you see all of this in a more decent perspective and you can start to put all pieces together. We haven't done that yet. Not as a civilization.

Paola: That is why you think that contact is not likely until we get there. Right? Humanity as a species is not there. You mentioned in your talk yesterday, if they ask where you are

from, you don't say from Earth, you say from LA.

Mitchell: Yes. That's true

Paola: So do you think there has to be a one world, kind of, political situation?

Mitchell: Of course that is what has to happen.

Paola: People have some commonality. Right?

Mitchell: In due course, that's what has got to happen. If we survive that long. We might wipe ourselves out before that. I don't think it is a forgone conclusion that we are going to survive. That is where the philosophic, the whole notion of determinism and what the future is like, applies. We are creating the future. It is not determined. If we get our act together and solve our current problems, we could have a sustainable, abundant future. If we don't, we could wipe ourselves out. We are on the verge of doing it with our current politics. It is regressive; going back the other way.

Paola: I need to ask you a personal question. Would you have liked to have contact with a cosmic culture?

Mitchell: Yes. Of course!

Paola: This is very ironic because you are the chief astronaut spokesman for the ET presence and have never had contact. [That is] like me, who has been in this work for over 30 years now and has never seen a UFO.

Mitchell: Yes. I would. I would like to speak from first-hand experience instead of second-hand experience.

Paola: Has it been lonely for you to have this vision and not many people to share it with, because the vision you have is kind of a "completion" vision; a kind of overall picture vision, and it is true that you are spending three quarters of your time

trying to explain it to people.

Mitchell: I would not put it in those terms because I spend ninety per cent of my time trying to explain it to myself!

Paola: But you know that is truth for you. You are outspoken about that.

Mitchell: Well, I'd like to discover Truth; when I can latch on to something that I think is true. Our knowledge base is incomplete and all we do is keep adding to our knowledge base. I think it laughable, frankly, that the Physics community comes up with a theory for everything. There isn't one theory for everything. There is not one explanation. We may eventually have several theories that can tie things together nicely but there is not a single theory of everything.

Paola: Like the Big Bang being the main theory of creation––and what about Super String theory and others…?

Mitchell: Well, the Big Bang has gone away but as far as Super String that is suspicious for me. It all starts out with the notion of Big Bang, which starts out, if it were true, starts out with incredibly high temperatures. So they think [we] need to get these high temperatures for this broken symmetry; all this broken symmetry reunited, and we do not have enough energy in the whole galaxy to get to those temperatures, to prove their point. To me, that is the single flaw in Super String theory. Now there are a lot of good points but if it could hold together any better than the Big Bang theory I don't know. I'm not a physicist.

Paola: You are not going in that direction. You are more into the awareness and what you can accomplish as a human. Is that right?

Mitchell: Yes. And I also think we are moving into a direction of quantum cosmology, as opposed to starting with "big bang" and trying to make quantum physics fit into it.

Paola: Quantum Cosmology. That's a new term.

Mitchell: That originates from Quantum processes. That is, the quantum fluctuations within a zero-point field can start the process that builds the process, which builds into matter, an irreversible process. We have some evidence that suggests that. We don't have a Big Bang but we have a lot of little pops! A continuous set of little pops!

Paola: That is a good metaphor. In your talk, one of the things you talked about is that the "intent" creates action. The intent creates our reality, which makes us who we are. If that is true, then that makes us powerful on a planet that has always been undermined by great powers trying to put down the masses. So, is the idea that "intent" creates, and we can create realities, and we can also create events?

Mitchell: We are creating. I don't create yours and you don't create mine but we each create "ours!"

Paola: In the past we have always given up our power to the power structures, so would you agree that it is very likely unpopular to the individual people and that it is hard for them to believe they have power?

Mitchell: You have to tie it with transcendence because, when you transcend the transcendent states, you get past the ego structure, and at that point you don't need laws, you have "morality!" You have inborn, natural ethics because it is built on Love.

Paola: That seems to be the secret word.

Mitchell: Yes. That is why the ancient traditions, even Christianity, say God is Love. There is symmetry here. The fundamental step where you get into this transcendent state is this feeling of ebullience, love and caring and unity.

Paola: And you do not need laws.

Mitchell: That is the law! You learn to live in that. It is hard to live in that too when you are in this world, that is why the great mystics go to the mountains tops; to get away from the world, so they don't have to deal with it––but it doesn't help the world that much."

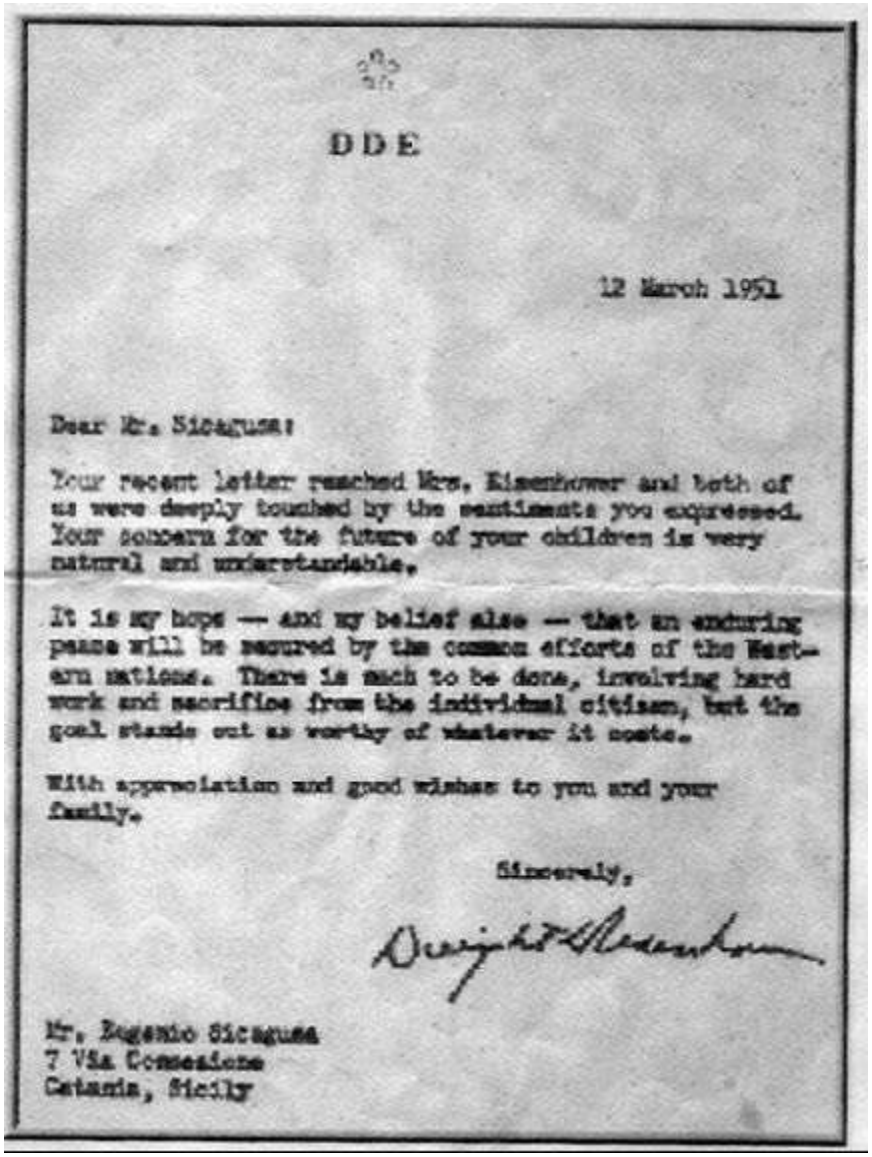
I do admit that to affect change, you need to submit to the "slings and arrows of outrageous fortune" and, especially for a woman researcher, it becomes a severe credibility issue. We all get discouraged at times, but to have a conversation like this with Dr. Mitchell was a once-in-a-lifetime event. The metaphysical methodology he speaks about is the very "key" to unlocking the phenomena. This wisdom is that of many centuries of study.

Out of Control Technology

Following is a letter by Dwight D. Eisenhower, dated 12 March 1951, to Eugenio Siragusa. It is obvious that General Eisenhower was aware of this famous Italian contactee whose contact was with a human-like group of aliens who landed at the foot of Mount Aetna in Sicily. The letter says, "Your concern for the future of your children is very natural and understandable." The concern refers to the messages given to Eugenio Siragusa, right up until his death in 2006, about the terrible fate of this planet. Eugenio said he had over four letters from Eisenhower on personal stationary and, if we consider that Eisenhower could have had a meeting with aliens at Holloman Air Force Base during the fifties, this correspondence becomes very significant. What the extraterrestrials told Eugenio Siragusa was this:

July 30, 1963
"The deadly effects of the nuclear experiments will change everything. The face of your planet will change if responsible men will not sign a treaty. You, terrestrial scientists, cannot vaguely imagine what you have already built and what you still intend to build with your foolish craze of the atomic science. The actual disasters that have killed a considerable number of innocent victims already are nothing in comparison to those that fatally await you in a very next time to come. Complete continents could be shattered from the terrible and enormous force of the cosmic-burning elements. We are still predicting this and nobody, and not even we, could do anything to change the tragic situation in which you are involved. The only thing that you could do to remedy this is to stop each type of experiment

immediately that is nuclear. We could only watch, we cannot do anything."



DDE

12 March 1951

Dear Mr. Siragusa:

Your recent letter reached Mrs. Eisenhower and both of us were deeply touched by the sentiments you expressed. Your concern for the future of your children is very natural and understandable.

It is my hope — and my belief also — that an enduring peace will be secured by the common efforts of the Western nations. There is much to be done, involving hard work and sacrifice from the individual citizen, but the goal stands out as worthy of whatever it costs.

With appreciation and good wishes to you and your family.

Sincerely,

Dwight D. Eisenhower

Mr. Eugenio Siragusa
7 Via Consolazione
Catania, Sicily

This is certainly an *exopolitical* and ecological concern for our very survival, and we were given a warning through the contactees of the fifties like Siragusa and Adamski. We, in the field, are so very grateful for the words and research of Come Carpentier who, although not a UFO researcher, has done an excellent job of seriously addressing the issues before the world. Mr. Come Carpentier is currently the Governor of the

Editorial Board of the World Affairs Journal. His Paper: *A Case for Exopolitics: Ushering in a Cosmic Dialogue* presented in Rhodes, Greece in 2006, gave us a certain visibility as well as credibility. He does some amazing research to correctly identify the culprits in the cover-up and he mentions the Kennedy attempt to cooperate in Space with the Russians as part of his lecture when he states:

"In 1955, Project Silver Bug was developed at Wright Patterson AFB. It set out to build *a saucer powered by gas-turbine engines.* It was only one of the earliest of many endeavors to replicate UFO technologies, many contracted out to leading military-industrial companies (such as Lockheed, Northrop, McDonnell Douglas, General Dynamics, GE, Westinghouse, Boeing etc.) The American engineer T. T. Brown made a seminal contribution in the early 1950s. He was able to build a prototype Flying Saucer for the US Air Force and founded NICAP (National Investigative Committee for Aerial Phenomena) in 1956, one of the major organizations dedicated to UFO research. His lifework is documented in the biography written by P. Schatzkin *Defying Gravity: The Parallel Universe of T. Townsend Brown* (2006).

In November 1963, President J. F. Kennedy dictated a memo addressed to the CIA, directing it to cooperate with the USSR to "explain in a credible way the impact of knowns and unknowns" in air and space exploration. He wanted cooperation between NASA and the Soviet Science Academy, a prospect to which many of the "conservative" military and industrial leaders of the USA were bitterly opposed since they regarded UFO-related "black" research projects as essential in the arms race in order to gain superiority in the cold war.

There is now a large number of declassified or leaked but verified official reports from various air Forces, navies, armies

and international military structures such NATO, NORAD et al. about encounters, incidents, chases, dogfights and confrontations with "alien" spacecraft exhibiting properties far superior to any available in the conventional arsenals of earthly powers. For example, there are detailed records about the "Malmstrom missile shutdown" (one among several cases) when in 1967, visiting UFOs deactivated a number of Montana-based ICBM missiles in their underground silos. *CNN* recorded that President Clinton's former chief of staff John Podesta asked the Pentagon at a news conference in October of 2002 to lift the UFO cover-up.
[http://archives.cnn.com/2002/TECH/space/10/22/ufo.recor

International official policy on the UFO Extra-terrestrial Biological Entity (UFO/EBE) issue appears to have been closely coordinated between the leading military powers, through NATO (reportedly within P.I.40, 54/12) and bilateral contacts between the USA and the USSR to prevent uncontrolled disclosures and leaks. As noted earlier, occasional leaks have however been permitted (perhaps because they were not always avoidable) and even encouraged, with *plausible deniability* built in.

That term *plausible deniability* will appear again below because many whistle-blowers need to use this method to disclose the truth "between the lines!" We see this in the testimony of Ed Rothchild Fouche when he speaks of the advanced triangular craft, the TR3B, and the new Aurora anti-gravity craft, the craft that he says is created in Area 51 and could easily be mistaken for alien vehicles. In his novel written with Brad Steiger called Alien Rapture, he tells much truth in-between the lines, but leaves an escape with *plausible deniability*.

His interview in my first book *Connecting the Dots: Making*

Sense of the UFO Phenomena, gives the reader details of his subcontracting work at Area 51 S-4 on back-engineered vehicles and the dangers involved with disclosing this fact. This was repeated to me by the testimony of KSC "ground crew astronaut," Clark McClelland, who had knowledge of *Fastwalkers* and *Onion drives* and saw those two back-engineered UFOs in Belize while he was on vacation there. Do we have "warp drive?" Physicist Jack Sarfatti seems to think so when he talks to his fellow scientists who are trying to develop a zero gravity craft. He is trying to visualize "a force field with its gentle push…is an ideal agent for imparting acceleration to the occupants of a space vehicle undergoing high acceleration. With the pushing directly against each internal cell of the body, none of the structure or internal organs of the body tend to get crushed or even strained. In fact, it is easy to prove that if a uniform field gradient provides the total acceleration to a passenger, the passenger undergoes no stress whatsoever. He wouldn't feel a thing, even that he was accelerating.

This description is ironically what Air Force weather observer Charles Hall witnessed while he was on the Indian Springs Gunnery range and the Tall White alien scout craft took the American Generals for a ride in outer space. He says they felt nothing as they traveled at the same speed as if they were one with the craft.

People are always taken aback when I show them the footage of what I believe to be a back-engineered craft near Ponte Di Giulio in the Veneto Region near Venice in Northern Italy. The photographer actually waits for the craft to come out of the forest, and then it does two 360-degree turns and then it jets away and vanishes at light speed. That means someone currently must possess this technology because I do not think the aliens made an appointment with the photographer in this

dry riverbed in Northern Italy where the army generally does maneuvers.

I interviewed Jack Sarfatti in Rome in 2004 and, although he may not believe totally in back-engineered craft, he has some fascinating ideas in theoretical physics. He is willing to think outside the box and admit to possibilities that are not too popular for conventional scientists.

He has stated these possible principles:

1. Einstein's gravity emerges from the coherent phase of the inflation vacuum field.

The residual zero point energy density forms both the dark energy and the dark matter at different scales of the pocket universe we are stuck inside of.

2. Since negative zero point pressure creates a universally repulsive anti-gravity field that is the key to the metric engineering of the advanced extra-terrestrials in their flying saucers

3. Probably Anyon physics is how to phase-lock into the vacuum to achieve the superior flight capability we see in the flying saucers.

4. There may be a theory of how our inner consciousness works and that this principle could be applied to flight because Colonel Philip Corso says that; the alien beings (EBE) and craft were one.

It is fascinating that Earth scientists have possibly progressed this far but what is not fascinating is that it is part of the "Deep Black Budget" projects that are designed for superiority in war instead of saving the planet from any impending ecological catastrophe. Aliens do not use petroleum-

based fuel. Humanity at large could benefit from these technologies.

We are all going towards a new frontier and it is so difficult to break new ground because it seems "insecure." But the implications of *Exopolitics* leads us to develop not only a philosophy of contact but also some protocols which in this case may need to be set down on the grass roots level. I am sure with all the "formal" alien contacts in the past, there were governmental protocols already created.

In conclusion, as Come Carpentier so wisely says, *the Dialogue Between Civilizations* will have to include, sooner or later, those beings and cultures who are non human, but are in the *homo sapiens* category and who clearly have a presence on our planet and a stake in the future of terrestrial and human life.

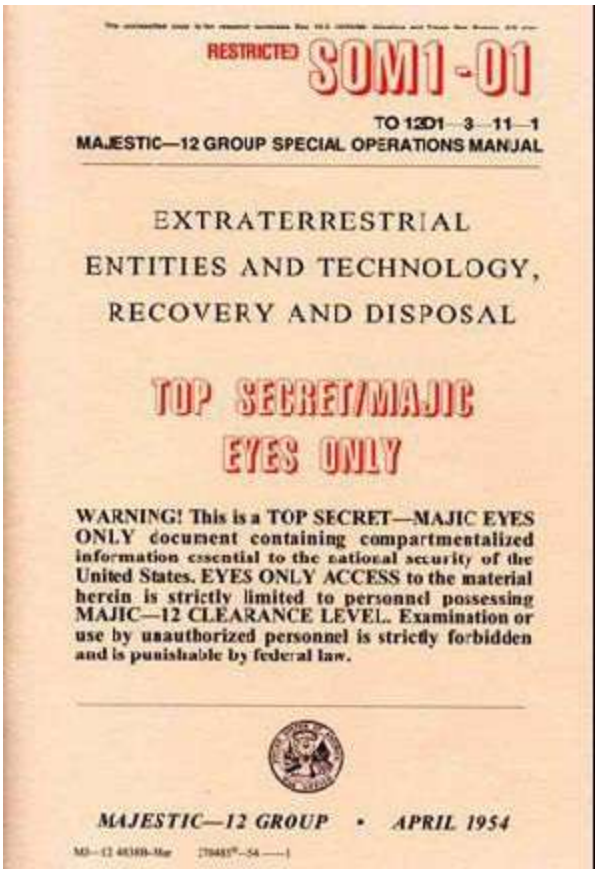
Protocol Three
Visitors From the Future and Dimensional Gates

We need to understand that some alien contact simply may be races from the future that travel in and out of a "time continuum."

- What if they are connected with "us" from the future and have come to warn us of some impending disaster?
- What if they have found the secret to dimensional travel?
- What if we are all related to the "star people" on some level?
- What if we need to rewrite our human history?

Extraterrestrial Entities and Technology

Discovery and Disposal Manual SOM1-01,
www.majesticdocuments.com
Why is this information not available to all World Health Organizations?



RESTRICTED

SOM1-01

TO 12D1-3-11-1

MAJESTIC—12 GROUP SPECIAL OPERATIONS MANUAL

EXTRATERRESTRIAL
ENTITIES AND TECHNOLOGY,
RECOVERY AND DISPOSAL

TOP SECRET/MAJIC
EYES ONLY

WARNING! This is a TOP SECRET—MAJIC EYES ONLY document containing compartmentalized information essential to the national security of the United States. EYES ONLY ACCESS to the material herein is strictly limited to personnel possessing MAJIC—12 CLEARANCE LEVEL. Examination or use by unauthorized personnel is strictly forbidden and is punishable by federal law.

MAJESTIC—12 GROUP • APRIL 1954

It is no secret that the late Colonel Philip Corso thought that the beings from Roswell were a gift from the future. He told me that the bodies contained “surveillance microchips” that reported back to the creators and he added that Pentagon was questioning who these creators were? Were they people like us? In an interview, he sadly says that the alien body was the greatest gift, the most amazing discovery because it could travel in space and sustain itself with electro-magnatism. Here Dan Burisch, a microbiologist who supposedly worked at S-4 on the Area 51 base gives us a reality that could read as a science fiction tale. Anyone who has personally interviewed Dan “face-to-face” can see he is sincere in recounting real episodes.

I personally believe any interaction between alien civilizations with direct witness testimony is worth

researching. However, my rule of thumb has always been to meet these people "face-to-face," question them extensively and then watch their expressions. Some people are re-living their experiences and are not making them up.

In an article titled "Psychology 101: Talking face-to-face is best way to spot a habitual liar say psychologists,"1 this very principle was emphasized. "Research has shown that people are reluctant to lie when speaking to someone else, perhaps because they feared they would be more easily caught out, either by their body language or tone of voice."

I found this to be true of Charles Hall and Dan Burisch. Unfortunately, the Dan Burisch case is filled with controversy; much the same controversy that I encountered around the Michael Wolf Kruvante case on which I worked for two years, with a series of seventy audiotapes and four long, extended visits.

The irony is that some main Burisch researchers vouch for Dan because they spent time with him in person and were able to question him but deny that Michael Wolf deserves the same consideration and have been outspoken debunkers of his testimony. We can see the value of real field research here, although it requires money and considerable time.

Both these men worked at Area 51, in particular S-4 facility. Both talk of stargates; both were interfaces for alien guests; both were scientists; and both were given permission to reveal their involvement, although some room was left for plausible deniability of which I spoke previously. That is how it seems to work. Write a book of science fiction, put in fact, as Michael Wolf did, so one can deny your direct involvement and hide the truth in-between the lines.

The Dan Burisch case was first researched by William Hamilton and then by Linda Moulton Howe, two expert

researchers. It was my curiosity and my drive to "connect the dots" that led me to Las Vegas twice to interview Dan. It was a pleasure on both occasions as he is a very honest, open and clear in his answers. He just wants to *tell the world* and he does it on his DVD with the same title produced by his friend and MJ-12-sanctioned advisor, and now his wife, Marcia McDowell. She is very important to the story so I asked her for personal information. This is the job description that Marcia McDowell provided to me.

"I am pretty much a life long friend of Dan and his family, who was formally sworn into Majestic as an operative at the end of 2003 and immediately assigned, per Dan's request, to serve as Dan's operations director. I became responsible for all formal and informal operations, research, communications and publications for Dan and the team. Now, I am permanently dispatched to Dan and the family, to carry on my role in our continuing research. This is customary, in Majestic, for somebody to be assigned to an individual who has held a J-number. Dan sat as J-9 for a short tenure, and so, if ever called to testify before the U.S. Congress, he could do so in a capacity as a former member of the Majestic. For that reason, I am permanently working in a variety of capacities for Dan and his family."

I thank William Hamilton who wrote the book about this case, called *Project Aquarius,* for the first opportunity as we drove all day from Laughlin, in 2006, to this scheduled meeting together. Both Dan and Marcia have been honest, cordial and full of information that will stimulate thinking on the part of the reader.

J-Rod and Looking-Glass Technology: Interview with Dr. Dan Burisch

Interview with Dr. Dan Burisch, Micro-biologist
Las Vegas, Nevada
2006

"The so-called Ufology Community has been creating as much mess around me as they can, for a few years now. It won't stop and I am not trying to either convince them or court them." ––Dr. Dan Burisch

Paola: Dan, tell us, what is your mission? What are your primary concerns?

Burisch: Currently I have three main issues on my plate: The disclosure-debriefing going to the public, which has been ordered by the Majestic-12; A major biomedical concern, and; Continuing my research into Project Lotus.

Paola: Every time I hear S-4 mentioned on the secret (not so secret) Area 51 base, I think of Michael Wolf and Bob Lazar who claimed they worked there.

Burisch: From the standpoint of Mr. Lazar's description of the S-4 Galileo Bay (4-1), he was accurate but with much less detail than will be presented by us in the up-coming DVD. I have seen and interacted on all four main floors, have seen all four sub-floor access levels and have interacted in three of those four. Should he (Mr. Lazar, or anyone else for that matter) have claimed to have removed any E115 (Element 115) from S-4, that would be an inaccurate statement as NOTHING ever gets out of S-4, except us poor SAP workers…and sometimes not

even those!

Paola: Please discuss your work with the creature we call J-Rod. Why was he named that? Was he really a time traveler––and from where?

Burisch: Yes, Chi'el'ah (the J-Rod) was from the future: roughly 52,000 years from present. They use time-travel technology to skip and hop in and out of time periods, from a base in the Aquarius Constellation: Gliese 876C. That is the origin of the name for Project Aquarius. That is why they identify themselves as J-Rods, as Gliese 876C is closest to 15 light years from here. The staging base cuts down on time travel acquisition. The J-Rod identified himself to the Sigma Linguistics Team numerically, as he pointed to an "inertial bar" drawing and a J from the alphabet. The name J-Rod is therefore descriptive and sums to 15, as a bar in the Mayan number system equals five and the tenth place in the alphabet is a J. The concept of Time Travel is a difficult one. The moral of its (time travel's) story is that every trip furthers a paradox. For instance, Chi'el'ah visited earth in 1973 and, in a subsequent visit, crashed near Kingman, Arizona, in 1953!

Paola: It is important to add that Ryan Wood's book, *Majic Eyes Only*, talks of the Kingman Arizona crash with some missing aliens. What did J-Rod look like?

Burisch: Above is a drawing I did of the J-Rod a few years ago. We are working on the first DVD as quickly as humanly possible. He had large, expressive eyes and had what seemed like oil oozing from his pores. Attach the likeness I just sent to a crouched, two-legged, large-footed being, with rough, oil-exuding skin, four long toes and four long fingers on each… and you will have a pretty good likeness. He was very ill and it was my job to do tissue extractions, in the Clean Sphere area, with a needle that had a suction device. This was extremely painful for the J-Rod and I seemed to feel his pain also while performing this extraction.

Paola: I heard him called the "Puppet Master" somewhere in my research. Is this true?

Burisch: I never personally heard the J-Rod at S4 called the Puppet Master, while I was in charge of the working group. I may have heard something like it in a conversation, early in my work with Majestic, but am not really sure. They usually referred to him as “Stump.” I have heard him called “Brightly” and, I believe, “Bright Eyes.” I never met the J-Rod at Los Alamos; that would be Bill Uhouse’s account. Three J-Rods were in the Kingman Crash: one a present-plus-52,000-years J-Rod, named Chi’el’ah, who was taken to S4 (he’s the one I met); one a present-plus-45,000-years J-Rod, who was taken to Los Alamos (presumed to be the one met by Bill Uhouse), and one a present-plus-45,000-years J-Rod, dead at the crash scene. (Bill Uhouse drawing below.)

Paola: Were you told not to communicate with him?

Burisch: Yes! But that was impossible for they, from the outside, could not control what or how he was transmitting to me. The J-Rod communicated by electromagnetic entrainment; he would “thump” the target (in this case me) with probe signals until he could bring his frequencies into a match with my own. He did it in much the same way as dolphins use their acoustic melons. As he would probe, it would feel like I could fall into his eyes. This is the way the present-plus-45,000-years

J-Rods sedate individuals as well, during abductions. They entrain to endorphin response and the auditory center, so while they are relaxing a person bio-chemically, they are telling them (in their own internal sounding voice) to relax. During the time with Chi'el'ah (the J-Rod) he could entrain so that I would feel as though I was actually in the scene and participating in the emotions he was feeling, while he was showing me (for example) where he worked in Gliese. When he would just directly "speak" with me, I could hear my own self-talk (private thought) voice, yet it was clearly of a differing cadence and with different language usage, than my own. He showed me his home planet and talked of his family and the fact that he had a son and missed him. The reason why I pushed was an act of friendship; he had a right to go home, and his mandated stay time had well passed. He asked me to go home. I agreed. He said a couple other things but…well…he wanted to go home to see his son before the crossing is completed. We are not sure how the time re-stacking is going to play out…and he just wanted to see his boy.

Paola: This must be very difficult to understand, especially since it is a time traveler and they could even be "us" from the Future! What does this say about our reality?

Burisch: Simply put, as each increase in the paradox occurs, more layers are added into our reality. When we reach the point, after transition, above the plane of our home galaxy, the "cards" are to be re-stacked and the paradox alleviated. The 45,000-years-from-present J-Rods want a catastrophe to be visited upon us as, should it, then our species will be split along logical J-Rods and spiritual (Orions) lines. By the time 52,000 years from the present arrives, the 45,000-years-from-present J-Rods will have been subsumed in their society with their

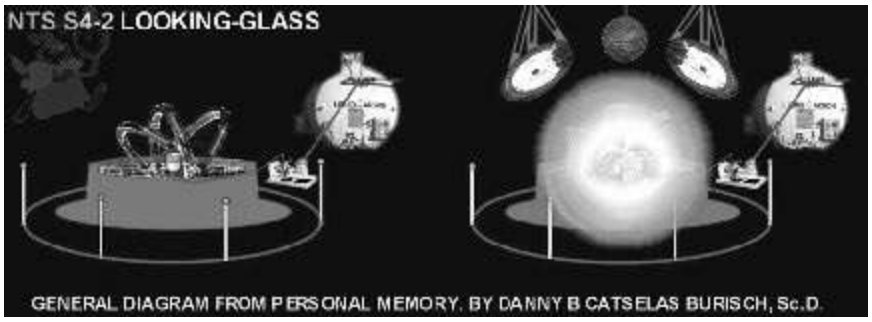
ideologies becoming nonexistent. So, to them, a catastrophe will justify their existence. As it stands, should no catastrophe occur (the prevention of which is what we are working toward), the J-Rods may be "re-stacked" (if you will) and possibly wink out of existence, become a non-human-lineage species, or remain as they are with the advent of a new paradox.

Paola: Where is J-Rod now? What happened to him?

Burisch: This is where the Stargates come in. Some are natural places on this earth and some are artificially created. We created an artificial one in the Egyptian desert, with the knowledge of the Egyptian government. J-Rod was brought there in a stroller and when I heard his plea to return to his family I became instinctive and pushed him through the Stargate. I pushed the J-Rod and really didn't see him go in. It just happened as I pushed forward. After that I was "just elsewhere." I haven't a clue where, but I was found.

Paola: Can you elaborate on these Stargate and the Looking-Glass technologies? Colonel Corso would describe electromagnetic pillars to me, in the New Mexico desert, and he said that when they were activated, they would create Stargates and things from other time dimensions could come through.

Burisch: First, may I start by indicating that I am no mechanical engineer, physicist, or draftsman. The attach image has been composed from memory and is pieced together using existing imagery.



The image above left depicts what the Looking-Glass appeared like during its slow rotation phase, and on the right during its full operation phase. The objects above the Looking-Glass were cameras, which appeared to be oval disks for intense light collection and recording, and what looked like a geodesic dome above the device, for audio recording. The Looking-Glass was composed from original diagrams for stargate devices, based from ancient cylinder seals.

I should in no way better describe the modified (from the Looking-Glass description) Stargate devices themselves, but safe to say they were based on the more general features used in the Looking-Glass. It is true that pillars of the general description, by Corso, are used to "tune in" ERBs, and that tuning is directed toward a stargate device slightly tilted between them. During the present time (2003) return of Chi'el'ah (the present-plus-52,000-years J-Rod) to Reticulum ca. present-plus-52,000-years, I did see three pillars, with golden spheres on top of them, and an apparent geodesic-like cage around the spheres. I should not describe accessory equipment. Two pillars were to the front, with one pillar behind the tilted stargate device. I could only see the third pillar when standing off to one side of the device's area, as the area between the two pillars, in front of the titled Stargate device, was filled with a murky grey oval, which constituted the event area.

Both the working Looking-Glass and the activated Stargates

had, I noticed; a very pungent ozone odor.

In the Looking-Glass room, once it was activated, it felt and appeared like we were into a round or oval room, even though the room was generally rectangular. It was as though, even though we could see the corners of the room, the space in the room was being bent around the central, activated, bright-pearl-white glowing core. At times it pulsed and I saw a blue shimmer around it.

The activated Stargate/portal in Egypt looked dense grey. I was slightly light-headed near it, and even though I could see the oval periphery of the "gate," there was a palpable sensation of a thick "bubble" of electrostatic energy around it. My clothes were clinging with static energy. After encountering it with Chi'el'ah, then finding myself sitting nearby on a slab, I found it very difficult to walk and coordinate. This sensation lasted for days.

When I turned corners in hallways, I would sometimes over-compensate and strike the corner of the hallway. At other times I would under-compensate, making too wide of a turn, then feel dizzy.

Paola: In my interviews with contactees, they say that beings sometimes seem to manifest from a Stargate with a shimmering blue light.

Burisch: About the Looking-Glass technology image: The blue shimmering is around, not inside it. Yes, I believe the blue was created by ozone gas as a byproduct of the interaction between the electricity and the air. If one looks in the center, it is a, cloudy white. Yes, there was some shimmering before the light becomes intense inside the Stargate device, but not when I saw it. It was already engaged and flat gray, no shimmering. When something comes out of it, it just manifests or is it out of focus;

then it just walks through.

I've never seen anything come through, aside from an early experiment where a person died (at S4), 1994-ish.

Pictured: Paola Harris interviews Dan Burisch in Las Vegas, 2006.

Paola: What agreements do these aliens have with humanity? I heard that we split off into two groups after some catastrophe: the J-Rods and the Orions, who are not that positive.

Burisch: What I know as true: There are two sets of treaties, T-9s, which involve the 45/52 J-Rods, the 52 Orions and us and the OF-9s, which involve the 52 J-Rods, 52 Orions, and us. Normally, when I mention a J-Rod, I am thinking of the one with which I interacted, a present-plus-52,000-years. (Readers Note: these would be those J-Rods from 52,000 years in our future.) The present-plus-52,000-years do not usually audibly speak language, but can make 'vestigial' language sounds. The one I was with had lost the ability altogether. The present-plus-45,000-years J-Rods can audibly speak language, to a very limited degree.

Paola: Dan, what do you want to happen with your story? I know you prefer to work in the field of Microbiology and you just want to finish this, your mandate to disclose the truth!

Burisch: For my personal sake (and my personal peace), before adjournment, the former MJ-1 ordered that my public discussions of my history must not extend past approximately September 2007. He ordered this to protect me, and to make sure I will be available to attend the 60th Anniversary party of the establishment of Majestic, to be held "somewhere" on the East Coast, September 2007! That's what he told me! But, I will tell everyone straight right now––it won't go that long! I have absolutely no interest in speaking publicly (whether by radio or in person) anyway. I have no interest in popularity or playing any PR games! I'll leave that to other people who are interested in such matters. I am fulfilling what I must do, then moving on with my life, research, and publications. I understand that certain things are being programmed in order for me to fulfill my Level 1 orders, and the important spread of this information, so while I am honored by them, I am personally "putting up with" interviews. I find no pleasure in publicity––none. I am, by nature, a researching recluse. That won't change.

Bill Hamilton is among the very best of investigators and has a book on my story called Project Aquarius, so that is out.

Paola: Our own researchers tend to crucify "whistleblower" testimony I know you have been threatened, so how public do you wish to be?

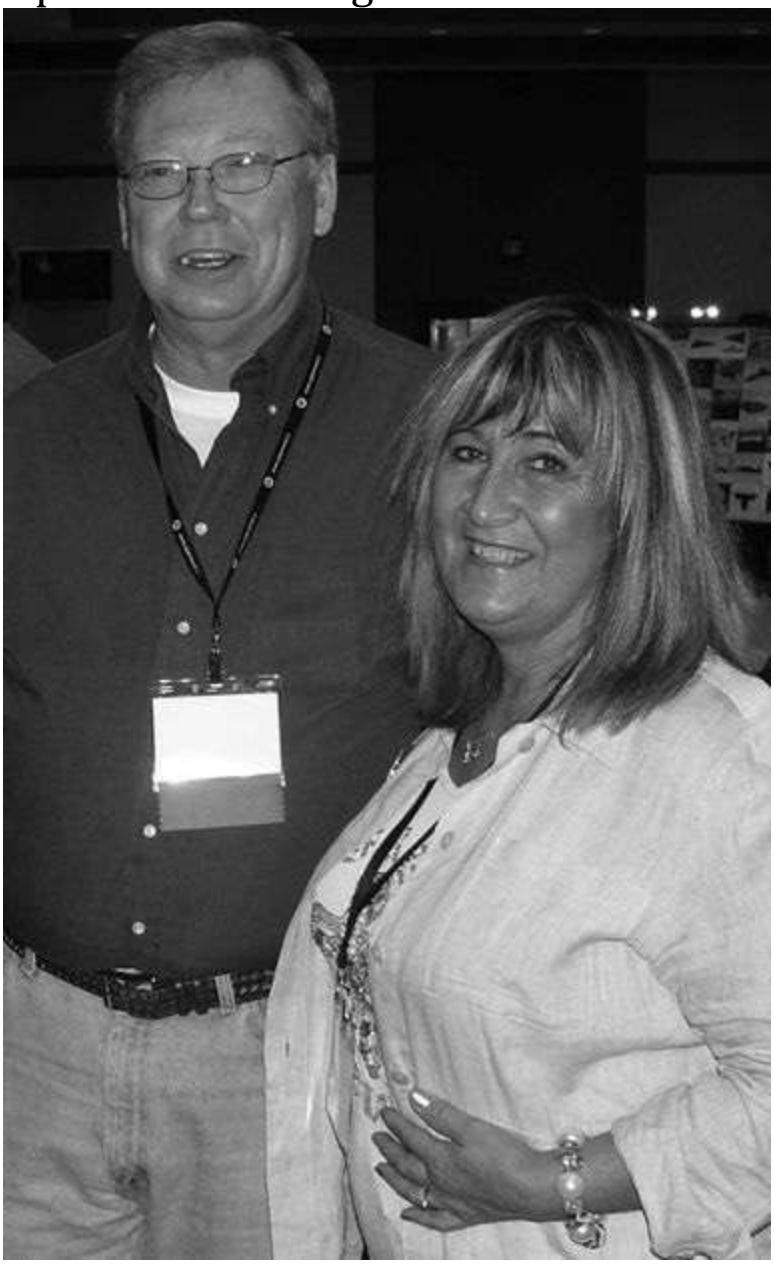
Burisch: I have just agreed, with Marcia, on a totally separate issue, to give condensed disks away, the bulk amount from about 100 hours of my debriefing, FREE to media and investigators. My intention is I just want the message out.

–Danny B Catselas Burisch, Sc.D.

“Eiecitque Adam et conlocavit ante paradisum voluptatis cherubin et flammeum gladium atque versatilem ad custodiendam viam ligni vitae.” Gen. 3:24

The Rendlesham Forest Incident

Sgt. Jim Penniston recalled that he was given a binary code that could be interpreted as message from time travelers.



Pictured: Jim Penniston and Paola Harris, UFO Congress, 2011.

The Rendlesham Forest Incident, also known as 'Britain's Roswell', is undoubtedly one of the best-documented and most

significant military encounters with a UFO. It is also a case that involved very credible witnesses, trained (USAF) United States Air Force observers. The incident spanned four days in 1980. Rendlesham Forest is a large pine forest, east of Ipswich, in Suffolk, England. Nearby are the twin NATO air bases, RAF Bentwaters and RAF Woodbridge; at the time both bases were being leased to the United States Air Force. Several UFO incidents, including multiple-witness sightings by military personnel, ground traces, and radioactive anomalies were reported from Rendlesham forest. According to USAF security patrolmen on duty, "the object was described as being metallic in appearance and triangular in shape, approx. 2-3 meters across the base...it illuminated the entire forest with a white light, and had a pulsing red light on top and a bank(s) of blue lights underneath." In November, 2002, the British Ministry of Defense released the "Rendlesham File" of documents related to and confirming the Rendlesham Forest incident.

TheRendleshamForestIncident.com website is dedicated to preserving information regarding this historic incident and encounter, with a Craft of Unknown Origin. The mission is to educate future generations worldwide of the extreme importance of "The Rendlesham Forest Incident."

Protocol Four
Viruses and Biological Contamination

We need to protect ourselves from viruses and biological contamination on both sides. Is contact with non-human life forms an exo-biological problem? Should it be dealt with by an international commission?

- Why is this information only available to the military when civilians are being impacted?
- Why is this not available to the World Health Organization?

It has always been interesting to me how Exo-biology is accepted as a new discipline in our society especially since, it was promoted by the great astronomer Carl Sagan. Recognized in many universities with many graduate and post-graduate courses, it has entered our mainstream academia.

However, it seems that *Exopolitics* is having a more difficult time in emerging from the "fringe" discipline of Ufology. As I see it, they are both very much connected because we are dealing with strange foreign beings composed of a different biology from the human species, and who may be carrying strange new strains of viruses. Conversely, we are also a danger to them if our biologies do not match and these things should be dealt with before official contact begins. It was not dealt with well in Brazil. The Varginha case for me represents one of the most blatant examples of our ignorance on this planet and our lack of foresight and readiness for eventual contact. This case is one of the most important cases ever researched and A.J. Gevaerd's contribution is invaluable to the archive of great UFO crash cases and lacking protocols established to handle them.

The Varginha Case: Briefing by A.J. Gevaerd, Brazil

Bribe offers

The main witnesses of the case, Luísa Helena Silva and her daughters, Liliane and Valquíria, received the visit of four men who refused to identify themselves. The men were ready to pay any money to make the women deny the story. If the girls had accepted, they would have had interviews in a TV channel out of the city. Another witness was a friend of the girls called Kátia Xavier.

Cover-up maneuvers

Aiming to cover up the evidences presented by the ufologists, the head department of the School of Sergeants of the Armed Forces (ESA), under orientation of General Sérgio Pedro Coelho Lima, launched on May 10th, 1996 an internal investigation to find who among its members were linked to the events revealed about the case.

Military concerns

Testimonies about the subject given to ufologists in charge of the case were presented to Colonel René Jairo Fernandes. The officials answered questions on where they were and what they were doing at crucial date and time when the event took place. These were some of the questions left unanswered by General Lima when asked by journalists, who made him upset saying that he did not need to prove anything to anyone.

UFO crash confirmed

The first references to the UFO crash date to January 13, 1996, but witnesses revealed that the first capture was made in the

morning of January 20th, at 10:30 AM, by members of the Fire Brigade under command of Major Maciel, Sergeant Palhares, Corporal Rubens, and Privates Nivaldo and Santos.

Aliens shot with a rifle

Around 2:00 p.m. on January 20th, members of the Armed Forces made a search at the neighborhood where the creature was found. Witnesses heard sounds of shots and saw the troops carrying bags with something moving inside it. Around 8:00 p.m. two officers from the Intelligence Service captured another creature that was taken to the Hospital Regional de Minas, and transferred afterwards to Hospital Humanitas, where the creature eventually died.

Pressure and manipulation

The witnesses of the case were put under pressure to remain in silence or to dismiss the events. On the contrary to what many people might have thought, the exposure in the media and the fame the girls got changed their lives.

Threatening calls

Ufologists and main investigators in charge of the case were threatened with mysterious phone calls. Unidentified people made the calls, who had the clear intention to scare the researchers.

Mysterious characters

Two men when leaving her job around 2:00 a.m. on January 18, 1997 approached the housewife, Luísa Helena. The men were the same who had showed up in her house some days ago offering her money. The men wanted to convince her at any cost to say that everything was nothing but a joke. *"They tried*

to silence me," says Luísa.

Moralist agents

Men-in-black? Secret agents? Military? Agents from moralist institutions? As institutions and, as moralists we could find many of them. It depends on the sense that we can apply to the word "moralist." However, ufologist Ubirajara Rodrigues presents in his book *O Caso Varginha* information that possibly those people belong to some kind of religious institution.

Operation "Pregnant Dwarfs"

The several contradictions involving the sequence of events presented by ESA commanders show that something strange and abnormal really happened that January morning in Varginha (MG). On May 8, 1996, General Lima read a press release from the institution stating that, *"no element or material from the school had any involvement with the alleged events of January 20th, which dismisses any other testimonies."*

Some time after that, a serious contradiction came to surface. Major Calza, who together with General Lima took part in the release of the official version, appeared in a BBC video saying that "*that day there was a malformed and mentally disabled dwarf who was injured by a hailstorm and, therefore, wandered by Varginha scaring residents together with his wife, another dwarf, who, besides that, was pregnant and ready to breed."* However, during the sequence of the interview, Major Calza slipped by saying, *"That was when we [The Army] caught that creature."*

Injured creature

In the beginning of 2003, the US ufologist and orthopedic surgeon Roger Leir was in Varginha with the objective of

gathering information about the case. That time, he talked to another physician who refused to give his name and assisted the captured creature at Hospital Regional. According to the Brazilian doctor, the body had different kinds of injuries, but he was sure that the creature was alive at the moment it entered the hospital.

He stated that when trying to examine the injuries of the being, he suddenly felt *"as if my hands were automatically driven,"* and also believed that *"it was as if the lights in the room had suddenly changed, becoming yellowish,"* it also appeared that "the perception increased somehow." He could not understand well the physiological constitution of the body he was examining, although that was something anthropomorphic, with a head, a trunk, and limbs.

The doctor did not hear any sound that could have been made by the creature, or mentioned the existence of the "much" commented on *"thin and bifurcate tongue,"* reported by other medical and military witnesses. But he confirmed seeing the being's slow movements when showing life signals, and refused to say that the creature seemed to breathe.

A.J. Gevaerd: Editor of Brazil's UFO magazine
Interview by Paola Harris

Paola: Now I would like to understand the situation better, because I thought you said a Fireman captured the last creature. Was that Chereze? Did he contract a high fever and tumor?

Gevaerd: The first creature was captured in the morning on January 20, 1996 by a team of firemen. The second one was captured by Chereze at 8 p.m. that day. He was a military policeman of the intelligence service of the Military Police,

called P2.

Paola: Was there an official doctor's autopsy?

Gevaerd: We do not have any autopsy report, and it was performed by another doctor's team; in another town. The man interviewed by Roger was an orthopedic doctor who was on duty as his regular schedule on the night of January 20, 1996 at the Regional Hospital, to where Chereze took the second creature. The medical was asked by the military to take a simple look at the creature and spend only a few minutes with it.

Pictured: Marco Eli Chereze.

Paola: Why did the creature have surgery if they killed him?

Roger Leir in his book said his leg was injured!

Gevaerd: The leg seemed injured but no surgery occurred. The alien was almost dead. Nobody killed it, as it was about to die on its own in the few next minutes.

Paola: A.J., this case is so important to the protocols for contact, can you clarify what happened.

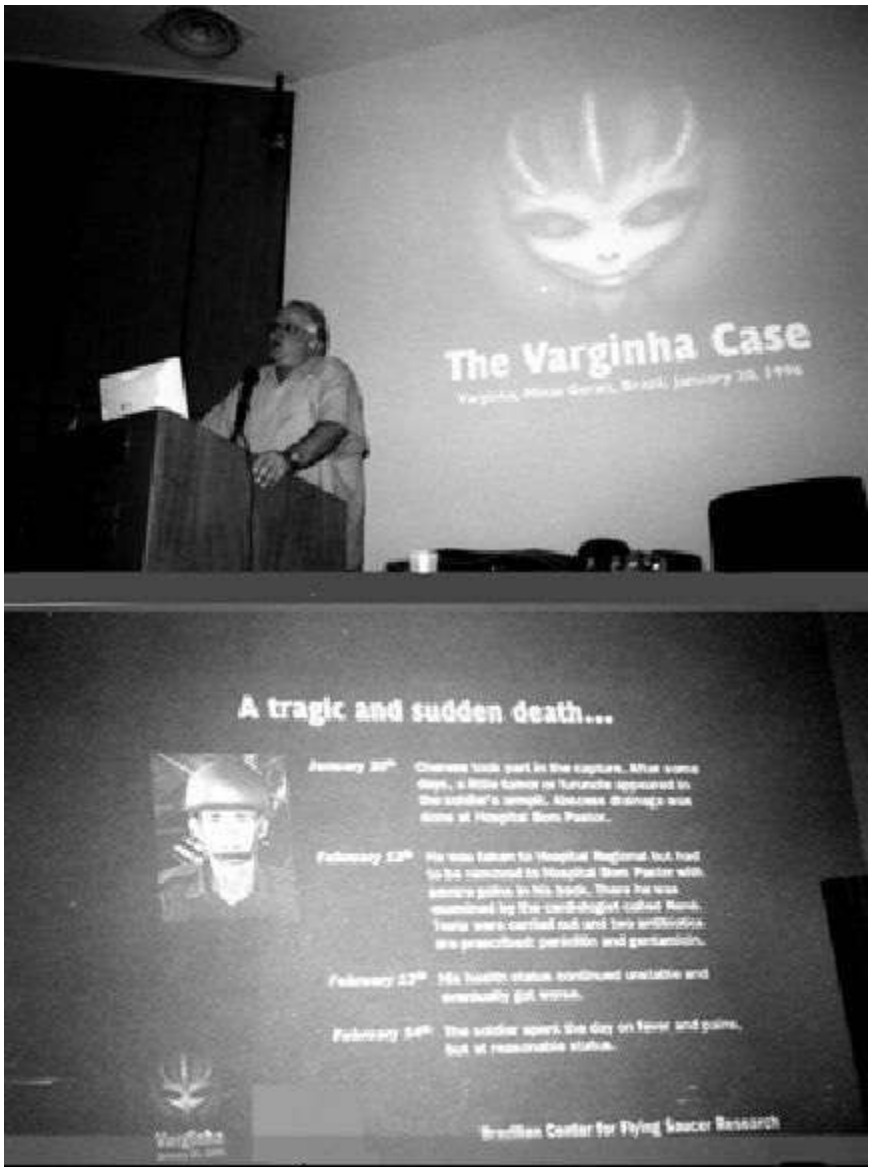
Gevaerd: In August 2004, was revealed in Brazil a long interview of researcher Ubirajara Franco Rodrigues with Dr. Cesário L. Furtado, one of the physicians who had attempted, without success, to heal the young policeman Marco Eli Chereze, deceased less than a month after having been in contact with one of the mysterious beings captured in Varginha, in January 1996. One of the most serious facts of the "Varginha case" and one of the most appalling; was the death, on February 15, 1996, of Corporal Marco Eli Chereze, who was then aged 23. As we know, he was part of the secret service of the Military Police (P2) that participated in the capture of the second creature in the night of January 20, 1996. The news of his death spread very fast, during the first months of the investigations, according to other sources, which revealed that a policeman had died because of a generalized infection after having been in contact with the ET. Faced with the gravity of the situation, the subject was treated with extreme caution by the investigators concerned with the case, while the lawyer, and consultant to the UFO review––Ubirajara Franco Rodrigues, was still searching for new information.

Paola: A.J., I think that the doctors of the world should have a World Symposium to study this because it happened in Brazil and someone died. Imagine if it had been children or an entire population. Conversely, Colonel Corso said that the being (EBE)

at Roswell faded fast because he was taken out of his electromagnetic environment. We were not even capable of saving them or one of "our own." What else can you tell us about Chereze's reaction? He seemed to keep his composure considering he had a creature on his lap.

Gevaerd: Rodrigues managed to check with the City Hall that a policeman had really died shortly after the capture of the creatures. The ufologist even obtained a copy of the death record, by which he was able to locate the family of the man. The same witness who alerted the investigators about the death of Chereze also declared that the creature, at the moment of the capture, would have attempted a light reaction, obliging the policeman to touch his left arm without his gloves. For some of his colleagues, he would have been contaminated one way or another.

The family of Marco Eli Chereze managed to have an inquiry opened by the local police precinct in order to establish eventual medical responsibilities for his death. At that time, searches seemed to be doomed to failure, but they are still under way at the present time. The parents did that because, a few days after January 20, a small tumor, similar to a furuncle, appeared under one of the armpits of Chereze. That tumor; according to what was learned at the time, would have been rapidly extracted by the doctor in charge at the very premises where he was serving. We know today that nothing like happened. But what most drew the attention of the man's family was the lack of information about his health condition and, later, about his tragic death. Even months after his burial, nobody knew exactly the cause of his death.



Paola: If the autopsy were available to the World Health organizations then we could do something about this and establish certain protocols and more importantly inform our populous the way the military does in the Majestic-12 Special Operations (SOM1-01) manual titled *Extraterrestrial Entities and Technology: Discovery and Disposal* (www.majesticdocuments.com). Why is this privileged information? What do you know about the autopsy, A.J.?

Gevaerd: The police superintendent himself, who lead the inquiry, was not able to be present at the autopsy of the policeman, in spite of his insistence in the face of the police corps in which Chereze served. The retention and/or dissimulation of information regarding that subject were purely and simply an affront to the family of Chereze and to the laws of the Nation. Even worse, such an affront was committed by the Military Police itself. It was only one year after the event of Varginha, on January 20, 1997 that things began to move, after the dissimulation of the facts had been denounced publicly with insistence, both by ufologists and all the press.

Among the most disquieting facts put forward by the investigators, there was precisely the absence of information regarding the death of Chereze, the most important piece of the headache named the *Varginha Case*. Thus, in the middle of a press meeting at the first anniversary of the event, investigators denounced the silence and obtained that the family, the police superintendent and the press had at last access to the autopsy file. From its contents, soldier Chereze would have died from a generalized infection. The policeman would have arrived at home, a certain night after the capture of the creature, suffering from a strong pain in the back. After the ablation of the tumor, he would have shown a gradual process of paralysis and fever which, becoming more serious, obliged him to go to the hospital, Bom Pastor, where he remained confined and practically isolated from his family during several days. Close relatives of the policeman, especially his sister, Marta Antônia Tavares, the one who went the most frequently to the hospital, could not have contact with him and had great difficulty to meet the doctor responsible for the treatment; and

it was even more difficult for them to discover what the illness was. Little time after his entry at the hospital Bom Pastor, the policeman was transferred to the hospital Regional Do Sul de Minas, also located in Varginha, the same hospital where he would have brought, in the night of January 20, the creature he had captured. Chereze was led directly to the center for intensive care of the establishment and taken in charge by the very physician who reveals today publicly what he knows. This is where Chereze passed away at exactly 11 a.m on February 15th, twenty-six days after his contact with the extraterrestrial.

I am including this in this report with the generous cooperation of A.J. Gevaerd, Brazil *UFO* magazine, and veteran French researcher Gildas Bourdais, both good friends.

What was the Cause of the Death of Policeman Marco Eli Chereze?

Briefing About the Varginha Case by A.J. Gevaerd
Interview by Gildas Bourdais

"Although all the tests and exams possible were applied in the search of a diagnosis, he could not be saved in time," was to declare the superintendent in charge of the inquiry, in the course of his deposition before the judge of the "COMARCA." It was just discovered that the physicians who took care of Chereze at the time did not have the faintest idea of how to fight the illness that was striking him down. After the decease of the boy had been unveiled before the press present at the meeting of January 1997, the commander of the Military Police of the state of Minas Merais denied the facts immediately, including the presence of Chereze during that night of January 20th. But, in order to protect such an absurd story, they invented an even more-crude one.

The family of Marco Eli Chereze confirmed that he was indeed on duty that night. Furthermore, he did not die solely because of his professional activities after the contact with an alien, but the creature he had captured died also after that contact, and much faster than Chereze. "It seems clear that the death of the policeman has become the less controllable and the most dangerous piece of the process of dissimulation imposed by the military of ESA and the Brazilian Army," has acknowledged Marco Petit, co-editor of the magazine UFO, who participated actively in the inquiry.

A.J. Gevaerd then presents the interview of Dr Cesário Lincoln Furtado by Ubirajara Franco Rodrigues, stressing the

considerable research of Ubirajara on Varginha, and the "extreme importance" of this document. (Note of G. Bourdais: the following interview of the doctor gives a slightly different story). Here, now, is the interview.

Interview of Dr. Cesário Lincoln Furtado
By Ubirajara Franco Rodrigues
(Summary by Gildas Bourdais)

Researcher Ubirajara Franco Rodrigues (Ubirajara, hereafter) asks Dr Cesário Lincoln Furtado (Dr Furtado, hereafter) what was his role in the treatment of policeman Chereze in the hospitals of Varginha in 1996. The following is the summary of his answers to several questions, condensed in chronological order:

Ubirajara: Do you see other interesting aspects to mention about that episode?

Dr. Furtado: Listen, there is that story reported by the family (regarding the capture of the being), about which I don't know anything. But, we don't find any rational explanation for the death of this boy. Because it was terribly fast, you understand?

Ubirajara: Could it be caused by totally unknown bacteria, however improbable?

Dr. Furtado: Yes. Well, if we talk of something completely unknown, it is obvious that we could not risk any conjectures. There is no answer possible. Now, could something have penetrated inside his organism, something equally unknown, which would have deprived him of his immunity system? This is another question without answer.

Ubirajara: Could you tell what type of thing would be

susceptible to provoke that, for instance?

Dr. Furtado: I don't know. That might be an injectable "poison," an infection of injured skin, at the face or foot. It might be an injury caused by a nail, which would provoke tetanos, etc. But we know tetanos. A multitude of things, I might say, and this is just to enumerate some examples of what might have contaminated that boy and deprived him of immune resistance. I repeat that I say that it "COULD BE."

Ubirajara: Are you telling me that the death of Marco Eli Chereze was a strange death?

Dr. Furtado: A strange death, without rational explanation. In the course of my professional life, I have seen already two persons, aged about twenty-five, die of an infection, but we knew that both had immune deficiency. Both of them, if I recall well, had had removal of the spleen (splenectomy) following a past accident. After a certain delay, that causes immunodeficiency. In that situation, the person may decease rapidly if he finds himself in the condition of a septicemia. But, once again, it was not the case.

This is a classic case of the need for establishing protocols for contact across borders and on a planetary level but also for my true belief that the International Community should come together to study this. It is to the credit of A.J. Gevaerd in Brazil and Gildas Bourdais in France to lead the way for this futuristic intelligent approach to the study of Cosmic Cultures. They should become part of a team of consultants who are already experienced in dealing with the bizarre nature of these cases. On an exopolitical level as well as the exobiological level, we need to do this now. It will save lives. It will prepare us, and

possibly “them”, for a possible “favorable” contact that does not have to end in tragedy.

“*The Exopolitics Initiative* advocates a decade of contact through public diplomacy with the Extra-terrestrial intelligent beings who have been active on and around the earth for several decades at least and who seem to harbor no hostile or predatory designs. On the contrary some of them at least exhibit real concern for our survival as a species and for the ecological health of the planet. Lt. Colonel Wendelle Stevens (USAF, Rtd.) is one expert who has analyzed data collected over sixty years leading him to the conclusion that the Extraterrestrials who visit us have peaceful intentions.

Other prominent scientific names associated with UFO research who have a significant degree of credibility are Robert Oppenheimer, Edward Teller, Hermann Oberth and John von Neumann. In the USSR the eminent rocket scientists, Felix Zigel was reportedly involved in this high level scientific quest.” (Come Carpentier)

Let’s suppose the world wakes up tomorrow to find that ETs are here. There is no longer any doubt at all, no room for debate. They’re here. Now what? This is the scenario that happened to Charles Hall, a trained Air Force Weather observer in 1965. For me, the Charles Hall case that I investigated held a lot of questions since I knew he interacted with Tall White Aliens and their children in 1965 in Area 51. I asked, “Did you shake hands with them? Did you touch them?” Charles answered, “Oh no, they might kill you and interpret a sharp move as aggression.” But he added that the ambassador or elder Tall White did shake hands with the Bird Colonel. Humanity needs to know how to act and various investigators on contact cases can do much to acquaint us on the expectations of several alien groups. I see this as a chance to

mix fields and draw on our respective expertise. As an administrator in Education and a teacher for 30 years, I have a need to write and share information and a desire to learn more. Formal education is the key to future knowledge and Dr. Michael Salla has now designed a full curriculum for a Certificate in *Exopolitics*. I am now teaching three classes in the *Exopolitics* degree program. This is one solution to the preparation for galactic diplomacy and its challenges. This preparation could be considered political science.

Protocol Five
Communication with Alien Races

We need to deal with our fear of diversity on all levels. We can have contact with non-human life forms by learning about them first.

- What commonality do we have?
- How many races are visiting this planet?
- Is ESP and telepathy the only way to communicate?
- Do we need to become better "listeners and observers," thereby creating better communication?
- How do we foster an attitude of mutual respect?

The Tall Whites on the Nellis Range: Interview with Charles Hall

We need to deal with our fear of diversity on all levels. We can have contact with non-human life forms by learning about them first.

Pictured: Paola Harris interviews Charles Hall at Indian Springs, Nevada, June, 2004.

I met Charles and Marie Therese Hall in Roswell, New Mexico at the UFO Museum in 2003, and I heard Charles speaking about his experience. I realized that he was "recalling" and not making up this story. No one until that point had investigated this bizarre case of alien guests with their children on the Indian Springs gunnery range on Nellis AFB in 1965. The more I heard, the more I began to question my own sanity so I called in commercial airlines pilot Captain David Coote and we became an instant "Scully and Mulder" team for a year and a half. In the end, we flew Charles Hall to Indian Springs, Nevada to film his testimony on the spot where he recounts his many experiences. We also enlisted the help of a retired LAPD policeman to help find the other enlisted men with whom Charles Hall spent his time on the base since we had their real names. Forty years had passed but we were able to locate them and still with the kind intervention of this LAPD officer. For the first time in our research, we were able to enlist the aid of a forensic artist from Anaheim California Police department, who on her off time, drew a composite of The Teacher, the chief protagonist in the Hall story. This case changed my perspective on the level of interaction our government and/or military has had with these star people for some time. It is an amazing account and it is also one of the very most successful contacts ever constructed by humans with aliens, but then Charles Hall developed his own protocols from his own experience since "no one prepared him for this!"

Interview with Charles Hall
Indian Springs, Nevada
June, 2004

Paola: What evidence is there that Extraterrestrials are

interacting with humans on this planet?

Hall: In addition to my own personal experiences, the best evidence that I have consists of the verbal reports given to me during the 1965 to 1968 time frame by the other men who served with me in the USAF. I, myself, do not have any physical evidence, photographs, logbooks, anything printed or written reports. However, over the years, I have seen several pictures and highly reliable reports published in books by other authors that showed and reported on the tall whites. The pictures also showed one of the tall white's scout craft.

J. Allen Hynek of project *Blue Book* fame published one of the most interesting reports. He reported having chemically analyzed material that was reported to have fallen out from the bottom of a UFO. In his report, published back in the late 1960s, (not sure of the exact date of publication) he stated that its chemical composition was similar to the composition of slag taken from an aluminum furnace that had been heated to approximately 1100 degrees F (I am doing this from memory and believe that I have the proper temperature). He failed to notice that the chemical composition of that "aluminum slag" is the same as the composition of modern fiber optics that has been heated to its melting temperature. Optical fibers have a chemical composition that is very high in aluminum. If he had noticed the similarity, he would have had strong evidence for the existence of UFOs that also pointed the way towards understanding the construction of their anti-gravity drive power plant. If American scientists would inspect the sub-atomic particles that are easily created, (such as meson, baryons, etc.) to see which ones can have their path of flight controlled by optical fibers, his work would have resulted in one of the major discoveries in physics of all time. The physical

construction of the tall white scout craft and the tall white deep space craft is further described in my books. In addition, in the appendix of *Millennial Hospitality III––The Road Home*, I describe my theory of physics entitled "Hall Photon Theory." I believe that it explains why the construction of the tall white craft allows those craft to rapidly accelerate to velocities greatly in excess of the speed of light.

Pictured: Charles Hall, Paola Harris and David Coote, Las Vegas, 2004.

Paola: When was your first encounter with these white beings?

Hall: In late May of 1965 and early June of 1965. However, it took me many months to control the shock, the terror, my natural fear of them, and to accept the reality of my experiences. As described in my books and writings, for many months I lived in denial of my experiences, preferring instead to believe almost any other explanation for what was happening.

Paola: Were they ever in the company of other military and when?

Hall: Yes. As reported in my books and writings, I frequently

saw the tall white extraterrestrials accompanied by UASF Generals and other high-ranking USAF officers.

Paola: Can you speak from personal experience?

Hall: Yes. My four book series entitled 'Millennial Hospitality' and associated writings, describe in detail my personal experiences at Indian Springs, Nevada, and my personal interactions with the tall white extraterrestrials, whose Base is located in the mountains north of Indian Springs, Nevada.

Paola: What was your job and position on the Nellis Base? Please state the dates.

Hall: I enlisted in the USAF in July 1964. After completing basic training at Lackland AFB in San Antonio, Texas, I was trained as a USAF weather observer at USAF Weather Training School at Chanute AFB, Illinois. My duties were that of a USAF weather observer during my entire service in the USAF. In late March or early April of 1965, I was assigned to the weather squadron stationed at Nellis AFB at Las Vegas, Nevada. I was stationed at Nellis AFB from the early spring of 1965 until May 1967. While I was permanently stationed at Nellis AFB, Nevada, I was assigned to several temporary tours of duty as the duty weather observer to the Nellis gunnery ranges that are located at Indian Springs, Nevada. Temporary Duty meant that I received extra pay and benefits while serving on the Indian Springs ranges. However, my chain of command, my pay records, and my mailing address remained at Nellis AFB. In between my temporary tours of duty at Indian Springs, I could return to Nellis AFB for duty for various short periods of time. For example, I returned to duty at Nellis AFB for the Christmas holidays of 1965. As described in my first book, Millennial Hospitality, at first, the other USAF weather observers and I

shared and rotated the duty at Indian Springs. However, during the late summer of 1965, and at least twice again in the very early spring of 1966, in separate incidents, my replacement weather observers reported being terrified and threatened while out on the ranges. One was very badly attacked and given a medical discharge. Another two-man team of weather observers refused to go out onto the ranges because they reported that they were followed and harassed when they were out there. After those events, as described in my first book, a committee of high ranking USAF officers and government officials was formed and they decided to send me alone as the primary duty weather observer for the Indian Springs gunnery ranges, while still maintaining the temporary duty status with its extra pay and privileges. I was given special orders, as described in my first book. From that time on, I was stationed almost continuously at Indian Springs. I returned to duty at Nellis AFB only for a few short periods of time to rest and take leave, etc. F.-DD-214: On May 7, 1967, I was transferred from Nellis AFB to Binh Thuy AFB, Republic of South Vietnam. I was stationed at Binh Thuy from May 7, 1967 until May 8, 1968. I was stationed at Binh Thuy over the Communist Great Tet Offensive. Having completed my Vietnam tour of duty, I returned to the U.S. and I was honorably discharged from the USAF on May 8, 1968 at Travis AFB, California.

Paola: Were there others besides you that saw the Tall Whites?

Hall: Yes, the tall white extraterrestrials were seen out on the Indian Springs Ranges by many other USAF personnel. These USAF personnel frequently encountered them at close range in and around the buildings located out on the various ranges during both day and night time operations. Encountering the

Tall White extraterrestrials at close range was such a shock that they were frequently reported as ghosts, angels, or as fantastic creatures. For example, weather observers who saw a group of them standing side by side would commonly report having seen a radioactive floating horse named "Range Four Harry." Other USAF personnel would report seeing short glimpses of the tall whites at close range, and then report having had a "Missing Time" experience or having had an unusual dream where he had had daylight sightings of 'dirigibles' …these things were never talked about officially. We would only mention occurrences one on one. The only thing that was ever officially said was that the First Sergeant told me that under no conditions was I to ever put a UFO report on the comments or remarks section of an official Air Force document.

Paola: Do you still think they are still there?

Hall: Yes. I believe that they are still there because the main hanger and their living quarters were permanent constructions located in the mountains at the north end of the Indian Springs Valley. The aliens live underground. The main hanger is underground and dug into a mountainside. It has an ideal location. It allows the tall white deep space craft to easily arrive here on earth, land in front of the hanger entrance, and to enter and later leave the hanger without being easily observed and without interfering with civilian airline operations in the Las Vegas area.

Paola: Do you believe that there could be other races on Earth and where?

Hall: Yes. In the third book titled *Millennial Hospitality III––The Road Home*, I describe the second race of aliens that I have personally met that are here on Earth. In my book I refer to

them as The Norwegians. I believe that they are coming here from one of the nearby stars such as, perhaps, Bernard's star, which is approximately 5.5 light years away. They might also be coming from the next star past Barnard's star, which is approximately six light years away and located in the same general direction. I encountered them in Cambridge Wisconsin in 1961, and again in Madison Wisconsin in the fall of 1962 and in the very early spring of 1963. They look exactly like people from southern Norway, except that they have only twenty-four teeth and slightly webbed toes. Humans, of course have thirty-two teeth. The teeth on these aliens have much shorter roots than human teeth, and they can replace any tooth that they may accidentally lose.

This means that they are not limited to only two sets of teeth the way humans are. I would think that there would exist some dentists, both in Madison, Wisconsin, and in northern Europe in other University communities in the colder portions of the world that could verify their existence. Incidentally, as described in my books and writings, the ones that I personally met, had unusually calm and pleasant dispositions. They seemed to want only to fit into our society and enjoy life.

Paola: What message did the teacher give you and how do they wish to interact with us?

Hall: The Tall White female who called herself "The Teacher" explicitly stated to me that all they really wanted was for people to enjoy them, while they were here.

Pictured: The Teacher. Illustration by forensic artist L. Ruiz.

Paola: Why did you write *Millennial Hospitality*?

Hall: I wrote the *Millennial Hospitality* series because I want my children and grandchildren to understand how I felt when I encountered the tall white extraterrestrials out in the Indian Springs valley in Nevada. (This has been the chief motivation of the ninety-percent of the whistle-blowers whom I have interviewed so far.)

Attempts were made by David Coote to find corroborating testimony from any witnesses to Charles Hall's story. These attempts were met with some success after he was able to track down three individuals who were stationed with Charles at Indian Springs Auxiliary Field during the same period in the

sixties. In keeping with Charles' original desire to keep these individual's identities protected (as he did in his books) we shall refer to them as witness 'A' from Michigan, witness 'B' from Pennsylvania, and witness 'C' from Ohio.

My partner in the case, Airlines Captain David Coote, says their testimony, though not revelatory, is yet significant in cementing Hall's story in several ways. He states all three witnesses were also utilized as weather observers as Charles had been. They remembered Charles, and confirmed his presence and job as Charles had described. They also recalled everyday, mundane events and described the place just as Charlie had written in his books. They also remembered some of the other names that Charlie had revealed to us.

Witness 'A'. Wx observer for Det. 31/25th Wx Squadran (USAF MAC unit). Also, an ex-civilian policeman.

Regarding Charles Hall:
"I knew him very well."
"Really nice guy. Real sweet. Hard not to like Charlie."
"He was one of those really smart guys… chemistry major or something."
"I taught him how to play chess and he knocked me off the Base tournament one time… very intelligent."

Regarding significant events mentioned in Hall's books:

"They (other base personnel) used to come up with this story of 'Range Four Harry'. He was some kind of wild, radioactive horse." (Also Charlie remembered something regarding an incident where witness 'A' broke a tie-rod in a truck out on the ranges) The witness said "…well I'll be damned… yeah, I did that."

Witness 'B'. 62 yrs with a degree in electronics

"Charlie was a particularly bright character… more studious… more reserved… Didn't talk much about it… we heard rumors constantly (about what went on out on the ranges… 'Range Four Harry,' etc. Charlie was so serious about it. But he didn't really want to talk about it. I felt he didn't know whom he could trust. There were rumors about people getting transferred. If you say too much about this stuff, then you might find yourself where you didn't want to be. Charlie spent more time out there (on the ranges) than the rest of us. I believe in him… that he was dealing with something out there. I never felt I was alone when I was out there. It was a very secure area.

At one stage he (witness 'B') had been told from another individual that the Air Police never responded to calls out on the ranges because "they were afraid."

He stated that "Charles Hall is a very sincere person."

Witness 'C'. "Pushing sixty." Combat veteran. Retired. I'm guessing he wasn't on the ranges for too long.

"Yes I knew Charlie. I relieved Charlie when he left Indian Springs. It was an eerie place. Only knew Charlie a week. He wanted to talk to me about Einstein's theory of relativity… (when 'Charles' first got there, he)… was told to be observant of UFOs. I did feel many times (that) my life was in danger. I'd call the aerodrome officer at Nellis AFB whenever I had suspicious occurrences and they would never confirm any aircraft in the area. A lot of the time I knew I wasn't alone out there; whatever these forces were, they were hostile to me because I had a hostile intent towards them." (He admitted he had always been a "fight first" type of personality.)

He felt threatened by certain events that had taken place although he never saw the culprits. There were occasions when "they" would shut the generators off; once, both at the same time… also switched the light switch off in the truck when he had left it running outside in the dark. Witness 'C' stated he had seen unexplained lights out there, both on the ground and in the air. About the time he'd "finally had enough" an incident occurred, when he sensed company and where an "orderly" pile of large 'target posts' (approx 10" by 10" by 15 foot) had been strewn about just outside his range shack one night. He just jumped in his truck and drove back to Base. He told his First Sergeant that he didn't want to go out there again, that: "I've performed my duties to the best of my ability, and I don't care if you put me in the brig." "I recommended that they pull the weather station from the ranges and put it at the radar site on Nellis for security and other reasons…and that's what they did."

"It was either H (witness 'A') or Charlie who had mentioned to me certain areas not to go; where his ('A' or Charlie's) truck had been 'shut-down'… and other areas where he had had daylight sightings of 'dirigibles.'… these things were never talked about officially.

"We would only mention occurrences one-on-one. The only thing that was ever officially said was that the First Sergeant told me that under no conditions was I to ever put a UFO report on the comments or remarks section of the report…an official Air Force document. I'm guessing that apparently there had been a problem in the past."

Says that witness 'B' is a "sharp guy…. He has been tested as a genius."

So, how did Charles communicate with these people? He told

me that at first, the Tall Whites had a special helmet with electronics that would shoot a question into his temple if he pointed his head a certain way. With the passage of time, he said they spoke to him in English without using our "contractions" like "don't," instead they would use do not. Ironically, Einstein in the famous Oppenheimer-Einstein Draft Document also brought up this question when he wrote:

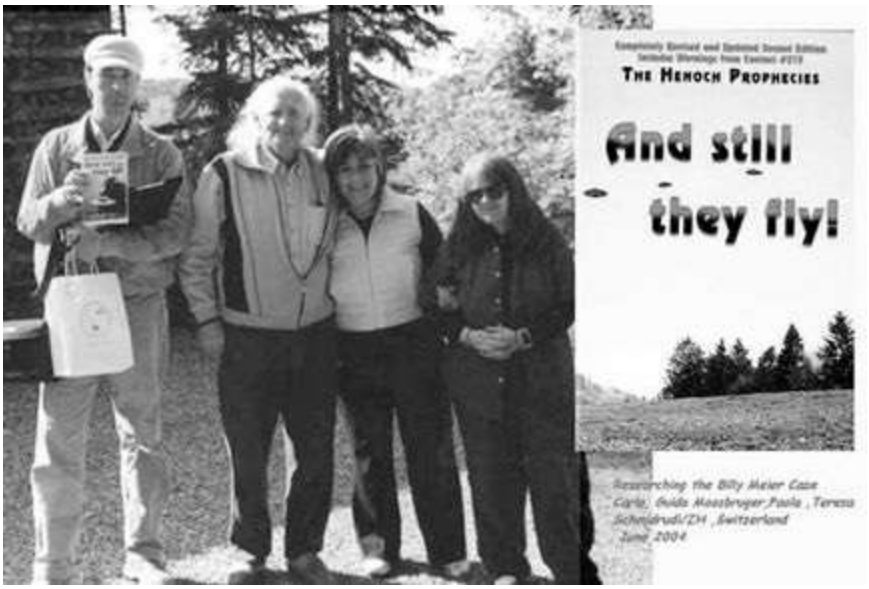
"*Relationships with extraterrestrial men presents no basically new problem from the standpoint of international law; but the possibility of confronting intelligent beings that do not belong to the human race would bring up problems whose solutions are difficult to conceive. In principle, there is no difficulty in coming to an understanding with them and establishing all kinds of relationships. The difficulty lies in trying to establish the principles on which these relationships should be based. In the first place it would be necessary to establish communication with them through some language or other*…"
[www.majesticdocuments.com/documents/pre1948.php]

When I published and researched the Charles Hall Case, with Pilot Captain David Coote, it opened my mind to the bizarre reality that aliens could be living among us and alien children could be interacting with human children. We are all going towards a new frontier and it is so difficult to break new ground because it seems "bizarre" but the implications of Exopolitics lead us to develop not only a philosophy of contact but also some protocols that, in this case, may need to be set down on the grass-roots level. I am sure that if there were "formal" alien-government contacts in the past, there must have been some preliminary protocols established. The Billy Meier case has some specific ones that we need to consider although those were the most human-like aliens recorded.

The Billy Meier Case Schmidrudi, Switzerland

In 2005, I went to Switzerland to speak to Billy Meier with three of my Italian friends, also researchers. Although Billy is very protected by his group called FIGU, I was able to walk the grounds, see the fantastic array of vegetation that grows there in that atmosphere and ask plenty of questions. FIGU told us that Billy had several attempts on his life and they were careful to screen visitors.

On Sundays, the mountain chalet complex called the Semjase Silver Star Center is open to the public. At 3:00 a.m., they have their Peace meditation in German and since we could not understand the language, we went to a beautiful flowering meditation garden on the property to meditate by ourselves. All at once I looked up and I saw Billy Meier standing by the fence staring at me. I know he was checking us out. Minutes later he sent Guido Moosbrugger, Austrian author who has been following the case for twenty years, to us to answer our questions for I understood that Billy treasures his privacy. Moosbrugger wrote the very comprehensive book, *And Still They Fly*, about the Meier Case, which I recommend to everyone. It is an excellent book on this contact case with human-like aliens but mostly it discusses what we are discussing here: the protocols for contact.



Pictured: The Billy Meier gang and Paola Harris.

In one chapter (pages 104-105), the Pleiadians say that their aural vibration is so highly intense that they have an irresistible influence on a human being in search of truth. “If unprotected, the Pleiadians are enormously susceptible to the vibrational realm of the average Earth citizen and the unavoidable consequence is hopeless confusion combined with a feeling of anxiety and they act illogically and uncontrollably. Therefore, the Pleiadians shield themselves against the vibrations of Earth people especially if Earth people are less than 90 meters (297 feet) from them. For security and safeguards, mechanisms are used to keep these vibrations away so they will not be injured.” (page 160) We see that the Pleiadian ship possess a protective shield that prevents 100-percent against the negative vibrations, including the relatively low frequency vibrations of Earth people. They also claim to have a mechanism on board that can measure the brain waves of an approaching human being to see if he will become violent or will panic with fear.

Billy says that he possessed the attributes that a contactee

must always have at his disposal. Among these requirements are primarily the command of spiritual telepathy and the ability to keep his own thoughts under control, and if possible, not radiate any negative thoughts feelings and vibrations into his environment. We are a violent species and so it is logical that some more evolved *Cosmic Cultures* are taking these precautions. The question is what precautions are we taking? It is time we put something in place. I have often said that we do not handle diversity well on this planet so how could we handle it with the advent of *Cosmic Cultures*?

That brings us to another challenge. What would one do if they ran into *Bigfoot* in the forest? The following interview opened my mind to this reality. Kewaunee Lapseritis has a great deal of video footage that he is not making public yet. From seeing the film, I realized that this was realty. This video footage taken all over the world proves, beyond a reasonable doubt, that these alien species exist. It impressed me greatly but also it complicated my research, as I did not realize that spacecraft and alien greys were also seen with *Bigfoot*. Everything must be considered if we are dealing with communication with alien life forms.

Interview with Jack "Kewaunee" Lapseritis, M.S., author of *The Psychic Sasquatch and their UFO Connection*

"I don't know who you are but I will not harm you!"

Paola: Jack, when did you first start researching the *Bigfoot* phenomena in particular? Were you first interested in UFOs before you became interested in *Bigfoot*?

Kewaunee: I prefer to be called by my Native American name Kewaunee. Actually, I was always interested in UFOs, and other strange phenomena, but strangely enough I started becoming interested in *Bigfoot* when I was 12 years old by writing to different Universities, different places and people in different areas. For instance, I would write to Harrison Hot Springs, British Columbia in care of the Postmaster. But in the 1950s, at the age of ten, I was interested in UFOs. Why I was interested? I don't know. But there was little information out there. Why? I don't know but at twelve I heard of *Bigfoot*.

Paola: I heard you say you were in the military for four years and traveled a great deal and you had ten years of college and four degrees, mostly in anthropology.

Kewaunee: Yes; I was in the United States Army Security Agency and did travel.

Paola: Ok. So how where you raised as a young boy?

Kewaunee: I was raised in both western Massachusetts and Vermont. We had a house in each state. I started my *Bigfoot* research in 1956 in Greenfield, Massachusetts. My father was a hunter and fisherman and there was an article in STAG

magazine about the Sasquatch, and that is my first experience of something like that existing. That's when I wrote to Rutgers University and several other places, but mostly Canada at the time, and I addressed it to the Postmaster of every city. I knew the Postmasters were working for the government at the time and they would have to answer me. I would send the article on *Bigfoot* and they would give me their understanding of the phenomena. As I traveled all over the world later, in England, East Africa, Japan, Australia, I continued my curiosity. I did an anthropological study living among the Tukuna Indians in Upper Amazonia. My mother would send information and magazines when I was out of the country for five years.

Paola: At that time was there only that one picture of *Bigfoot* with a film. Correct?

Kewaunee: Yes. The Roger Patterson film was taken October 7, 1967. I was living in Ethiopia at the time and that film had been analyzed over and over again and the scientists who just looked at it at the Smithsonian and they called it a fake. But today even the layperson can see the rippling muscles in all the right places, in the legs, in the shoulder blades. Other scientists have noticed that. It was brought to Russia and analyzed for six years by physical anthropologists and they analyzed frame by frame like scientists should do. Why the scientists in the United States did nothing is a shame on them. Why don't they do the same thing?

Paola: The same reason they don't do anything about UFOs and the paranormal and ESP. This is not part of the data bank of our western culture. It refuses to go there.

Kewaunee: It is absurd. Well, if you recall last week, the TV program 60 Minutes in August 2006, said this government

scientist quit because the Bush government refused to acknowledge, "global warming." They wanted to say that it was not happening. There is overwhelming evidence for this but George Bush and his father have investments in fossil fuel and continue to deny the truth about global warming. So I think many scientists are threatened and are told that you cannot put the *Bigfoot* information out there because the forest giants are associated with the friendly ETs.

Paola: In this book on Exopolitics, I am speaking about protocols of future contact with extraterrestrials. *Bigfoot* is a dimensional reality seen all over the planet. Can you give me three suggestions about how people should act if they encounter a Sasquatch in the woods? What should the Protocols be? What things do they expect humans to do?

Kewaunee: The most important thing is to be totally non-aggressive. If you have a gun, lay it down. If you have a holster gun, take it out and lay it down. Let him see it. He can see it and he knows what it is. You may say, "I may need that to protect myself." But they run 70 miles an hour. They can get a hold of you and they can flip a car with one hand. They are incredibly powerful but you see nowhere where they are attacking people. Be "non-aggressive," even in your mind. Back in 1981, I interviewed three people ages 19, 20, and 22. They said, "We don't understand. It was a 7-foot Sasquatch. We ran into an A-frame mountain cabin. It pounded on the doors. It broke the window in back." They thought it was going to kill them.

I told them, "No, it won't." They said it attacked them. "No. Pounding is not attacking," I added, and asked them what they were thinking at the time. One young man said, "If I had a gun I would have shot it!" Well, they were projecting their thoughts and it can literally read minds.

Paola: Then these beings can read your mind and these people did not realize it because they were not aware of telepathy.

Kewaunee: Right. They were projecting unwittingly all their negative thoughts to the man-creature.

Paola: Don't the Sasquatch know we don't use telepathy on this planet.

Kewaunee: Of course, but that is to their advantage, isn't it? I would also be thinking warm thoughts towards them. Just think in your mind "I don't know who you are but God bless you. We will not harm you in any way." Just think it. He will know that.

Paola: You said it is "a give and take" between food and gifts. You interact with these beings. They understand giving and taking.

Kewaunee: Yes. I've left crystals for them.

Paola: They disappear? They are not there the next day?

Kewaunee: There would be rocks there or sometimes herbs are left for me. I am a master herbalist. They leave certain things.

I often ask, "What herb is this?" They tell me telepathically what it is and its use. For years I stayed in a cabin. If I leave food then they leave a gift. My cabin is at the edge of a wilderness area. There is nobody there.

Paola: You said you are aware of three different types. Which types have you seen?

Kewaunee: I have seen the ape-like type called the Sasquatch and those we call the "Ancient Ones" that have far less hair on their faces. I've experienced ETs with them. I've seen small people. I saw one in particular with slanted eyes, sharp features and a space suit on. I've seen those from the Pleiades that look

like us except that they are tall. The woman re about 6' 3" and the two men are 6' 4"and 6' 6" inches, and they literally projected themselves down in the middle of a friend's living room and stood there. They had full suits on. The third Sasquatch-type has a dog face or looks like a baboon with a snout.

In January 1991, four 6 1/2 feet tall Kachina appeared at the foot of my bed in Sedona, Arizona. I was staying in the house of an Indian medicine woman, and as soon as I turned the lights off, they appeared. You could hear their feathers rustling. You could hear the bells around their ankles and they talked to me for roughly 50 minutes. They talked to me about my life. They are ETs basically. They are in the Hopi traditions. I understood what unconditional love was and being non-judgmental because of how they spoke to me. It literally changed my life.

Paola: Last question: Do you ever think we will know the truth about the *Sasquatch*? Will they ever come forward? Did they say more people will see them someday?

Kewaunee: They want it out more and more because more and more forestland is being destroyed. My feeling is that if the cleansing of the planet happens around 2012 and several billion people die, and plagues, perhaps earthquakes happen on a massive scale globally, then that is when they will want to help and they will really come out along with the friendly ETs.

Paola: Then you believe in that prophecy about problems in 2012.

Kewaunee: I sure do. The Mayan calendar is the most accurate calendar in the world, far more accurate than the modern calendar.

Paola: Then they told you that we are in for some tough times

ahead.

Kewaunee: They told me to put food away, water, warm clothing in several places in case someone discovers it. They said we will be safe in the woods but they live underground and at times enter a "portal" or "vortex" that leads to another dimensional world.

Epilogue

Kewaunee Lepseritis has written the most interesting, comprehensive book about the psychic Sasquatch, covering the most sightings on this planet. He has a unique relationship with *Bigfoot*, but, as a researcher interested in Anthropology. He also cites details of actual human interaction by interviewing seventy-six people (now 151 people) in his book, at three different meetings. He told me he even spoke with Dr. J. Allen Hynek who was very fascinated with this aspect of the phenomena. Betty Hill, the most famous abductee in the world, wrote a chapter called "Bigfoot in New England," which further documents a *Bigfoot*/UFO connection.

There are many varieties of psychic *Sasquatch*. The *Yeti*, who are white and seen in the Himalayas; the reddish-brown, ape-like ones seen everywhere in the United States; and those he calls the "Ancient Ones," who are humanoid, have less hair and are very intelligent. Most live underground and also exit from dimensional portals and are aware of their human neighbors. These natural dimensional portals have a shimmering effect in the forest and are described by witnesses. It is the same "shimmering dimensional portal" effect that I asked Dan Burisch about.

Because of the quantum physics principle of "non-locality," Kewaunee believes this being can appear anywhere as the ETs

do now. Kewaunee showed some astounding film footage of one young *Sasquatch* looking right into the video camera. He also showed many photos of these beings walking upright like us through the woods and talking food from people's gardens. He has also collected hair and feces samples and he has several large casts of its footprints so this proves that there is a great deal of concrete evidence to study. Even more interesting is this relationship Bigfoot has with the Extraterrestrial races. They and we may be genetically engineered races. Today we have many films and photos to add to this evidence. All this needs to be examined scientifically as it is a reality. Since spaceships are the common occurrence around Bigfoot sightings, Kewaunee encourages us to revise the scientific paradigm of research to include expert witness testimony concerning Bigfoot using anecdotal information.

For me, this is a perfect example of why it is essential that friendly *exopolitical* protocols are in place for future contact. It will enrich our lives to encourage a friendly relationship with these kindhearted beings and other visiting races.

We need to consider those cases that truly happen, even if they are totally bizarre. Who was the being that appeared in this school in Naples? Did a dimensional "portal" open up? The following case leaves more questions than answers.

Mysterious Humanoid Near Naples, Italy

An article about a case near Naples, Italy appeared in the Italian Newspaper *La Republica*, April 25, 2005 titled "Mysterious Humanoid seen in Campania region near Naples"

What the researchers are now investigating is a *Close Encounter of the Third Kind;* witnesses are still under shock. When the press published this news, a team named *Ufoitalia* (www.ufoitalia.net) said they were actively studying this very important case and announced the release of photos, evidences and further details within few weeks. They also claimed that, to protect the privacy of more than thirty witnesses involved, and due to the fact that the sighting took place in a very important school, they would not make public the name of the town or the name of the school. They mentioned only the name of the Italian region where the facts happened: Campania region where Naples is located

This is the testimony of the first witness who was investigated by the *Ufoitalia* team:

"Let me introduce myself to you. I am the headmaster of a secondary school in Campania. I am an old man and I never believed in paranormal phenomena or in UFOs. But a shocking experience, involving all the 500 students of my school and their professors (everybody got interested in the phenomenon with astonishment but also with fear), made me to reconsider my bias. In fact, on the day of April 28, 2005, more or less at 11:40 a.m., in the corridors of our very respectable school, I saw, together with Professor I.S. and Professor S.M., a *creature of indefinite shape*, completely naked, holding in its hands a strange object (it had hands but they were not human; they

were something like claws). We panicked and ran away and the creature did the same. Its escape was seen by at least 30 students, who later confirmed they had clearly seen it running. After this, the creature disappeared. I well understand how all this story could sound very strange. Like all the other school professors, I would never believe that such things could happen. Newspapers did not want to spread this news and when we called local authorities they only limited their action to a superficial inspection but, having found no traces or footsteps, simply ignored us, almost laughing at our words, saying it all sounded too absurd to be real. So we encourage you to come to our school to do a serious investigation."

(Note of the translator: Sadly, at the moment, we must note that more than one year after the facts, the so-called "Ufoitalia team" has done nothing, has released nothing, and their site reveals a desolating tendency to recycle old news with the only aim of sensationalism. Like too many web-ufologists, they only make a lot of noise, looking totally incapable of operating in the field; and, considering that Ufoitalia gave out no names; and that Campania is one of the biggest regions in Italia, with hundreds of towns and schools in its territory, they stopped other researchers from studying this case. As a result, once again, this was a triumphant cover-up.)

Protocol Six
Record, Collect and Decipher the Cosmic Messages

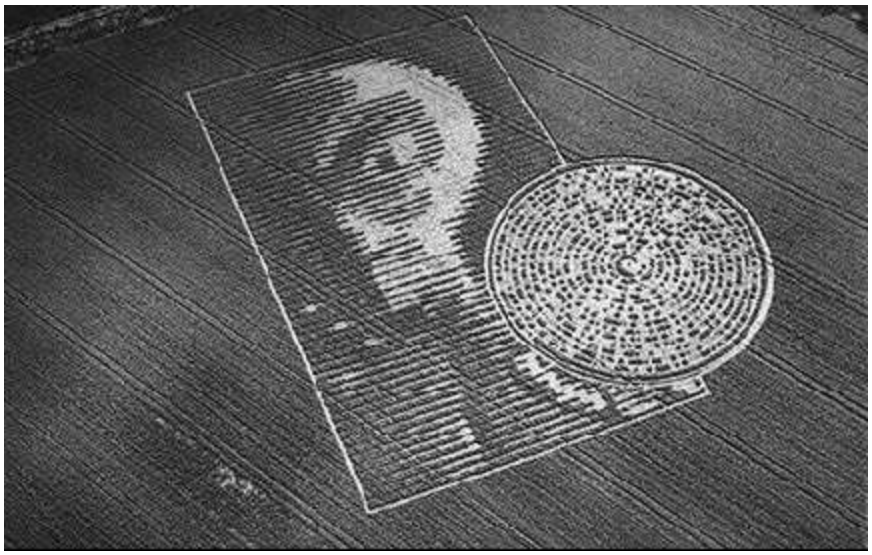
It is essential to record, to collect and to decipher the cosmic messages of all types.

- Who is in charge of collecting this data?
- Are radio telescopes antiquated technology? Is there a "deep" space monitoring system of UFOs?
- What is role of Psychologists and Psychiatrists in "contact cases?"
- Do contactees carry significant information?
- Who is deciphering the complicated mathematical symbols in crop circles?
- Are they really messages from the cosmos?
- Does the use of night screening devices such as infrared cameras and binoculars help us perceive another dimension?

Cosmic Message

This is the message that appeared in the Crabwood crop circle that has an alien face with a digital disk under the image. It was studied and deciphered and reads:

"*Beware the bearers of FALSE gifts and their BROKEN PROMISES. Much PAIN but still time. There is GOOD out there. We Oppose DECEPTION. Conduit CLOSING.*"

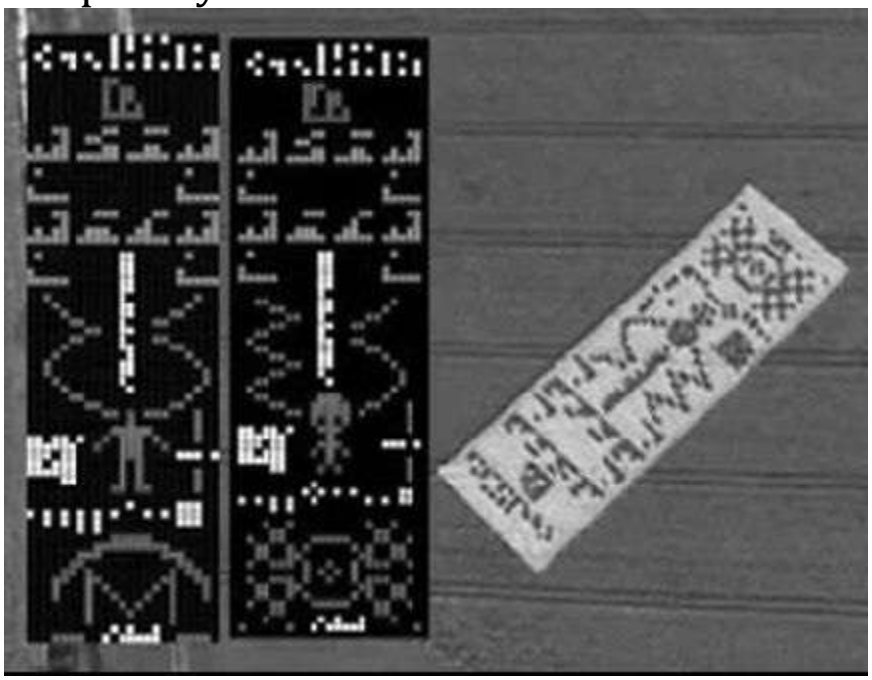


Pictured: Crabwood crop circle.

I believe this seems may be a warning from the stars. The *Arecibo Reply* crop circle at Childbolton, England has an image of a grey and an image of a triple DNA helix, indicating that he came from a planet that had silicon-based life system. These images should be studied as specific research that I call "cosmic messages" because we are being given the answers to questions asked but we are ignoring these answers.

Several new books and cases this year illustrate that we need to decipher symbols. Art Bell interviewed Jim Sparks, author of *The Keepers*, who has been abducted by various aliens for the last eighteen years. The aliens informed him that the earth is very close to "the point of no return" and that we are killing it off with our pollution. They had said it is still possible to save the earth and that the rainforests are the key. They are the "lungs" of the planet. The aliens are saving seeds, plants, animals and various things from here in case we don't make it (a Noah's Ark worst-case scenario). What is interesting is that the phoenix is becoming a common symbol. In chapter fourteen, titled "My Daughter," he learned that aliens also use symbolism as we use the flag, to represent leadership,

government, or some sort of organized structure. He has come to believe the phoenix symbolizes something very deep. It is universal in nature. It represents the organized structure that is in the process of saving this dying planet from complete environmental destruction. Sparks also believes this symbol represents several different species of aliens from all parts of the galaxy, and perhaps other dimensions. This includes humans, the same humans who have been members of this secret club for a very long time. The Phoenix is a symbol all of us should keep an eye out for.



Pictured: The Arecibo Reply crop circle at Chilbolton.

It is ironic that we have a significant mass sighting called *The Phoenix Lights* in Phoenix, Arizona. It occurred on March 13, 1997. This sighting, as described in a documentary by Dr. Lynn Kitei, changed the consciousness of hundreds of people in Arizona. I have noticed the murals depicting this mythological bird at Sky Harbor Airport, another interesting image. It's interesting that NASA has just adopted this symbol for its future Mars missions. The symbol is for the Phoenix Mars Lander. Does that mean from earthly catastrophe we will reconstruct "human life" on Mars?

The University of Arizona/Lunar & Planetary Laboratory • Jet Propulsion Laboratory • Lockheed Martin Space Systems • Canadian Space Agency • NASA
Phoenix
Mars Lander 2007
Pictured: Phoenix Mars Lander patch.

What is that a symbol for? It could be the fast accumulation of problems caused by ecological pollution, sociopolitical decay, genome fund depletion, and exhaustion of natural resources. If humankind wishes to survive, a new strategy must be adopted. One such strategy suggested is the "opening of the heart," suggested by Dr. John Mack.

What is most memorable is a spiritual intervention that was an enormously effective tool. Many remember the 1987 Harmonic Convergence of Jose Arguelles. It brought our planet together. There are many people in the field who are working hard in this effort.

The Messages from Contact: Interview with Yvonne Smith, Psychotherapist

Interview with Yvonne Smith, Psychotherapist
San Diego, California
May, 2009

Pictured: Colin Andrews, Michael Hesseman, Yvonne Smith and Col. Philip Corso, San Marino, 1998.

Paola: Yvonne, you are the creator of CERO. Can you describe the objective and the membership of CERO? What is your website?

Yvonne: CERO (Close Encounter Resource Organization), a non-profit organization, was founded in 1991, with a small, core group of members––charter members, if you will––who were instrumental in helping me establish ground rules and the name. The objective of CERO is to provide a "safe haven" for those individuals who have had a UFO encounter. As my hypnotherapy practice grew, I realized that many of these

people had no support system; they felt isolated. During the CERO group meetings, members are allowed to share their experiences, cry and laugh with one another, without the threat of being ridiculed. They have become a family to one another. CERO members, past and present, consist of people from all walks of life: doctors, lawyers, college professors, film industry personnel, construction workers, postal workers and housewives.

After founding CERO and becoming involved with so many individuals who had experienced "close encounters," I quickly learned that there was worldwide interest in this subject. Since then, I have been asked to make forty to fifty television appearances and radio interviews, both in the United States and in Europe. The same international interest resulted in my being asked to lecture, not only throughout the United States but also in South America and Europe. My website is: ysmith.com.

Paola: Yvonne, you are currently becoming more active since you took a few years off. Tell us what inspired you to return to your life's passion? When did this happen?

Yvonne: Because of some difficulties in my private life, I found it necessary to take a hiatus of a couple of years. My return began to occur in January of 2004. Individually, CERO members were calling, urging me to get the group back together. The magical aspect to this is that the members did not know that the others were calling. It was truly synchronicity. Once this happened, I realized that there are still hundreds of people who are having experiences who need help. CERO members inspired me to return and continue my "life's work."

Paola: How has the UFO field changed over the years?

Yvonne: In the last few years, the research shows that abductions have not slowed down and the aliens are rapidly improving the hybrid program. In past years, the hybrids were very unique looking and could easily be identified. I recently visited with my colleague, Dr David Jacobs, in New York, who reinforced the belief that the goal of the aliens is to integrate these hybrids among us, unnoticed, in our society. Of course, there is a tremendous amount of work yet to be done in this area.

Paola: What do you see as different in your hypnotherapy group?

Yvonne: Over the years, I have seen tremendous growth in CERO. Members have spent years processing what they have experienced and incorporating it into their daily lives. Their spiritual growth is truly inspiring. In recent group meetings, they have discussed the realization that, if they live their lives in a positive way and extend themselves to others in a positive way, the world can be changed. The established members are now helping and assisting new members to deal with their UFO experiences.

Paola: You have just returned from New York. You said that you saw Bud Hopkins and David Jacobs and you attended a Linda Cortile lecture. So many people are interested in this abduction because it, supposedly, involved the Secretary General of the United Nations. What year was this abduction? Tell us what you learned in New York.

Yvonne: The Linda Cortile case is not only interesting and compelling but, recently while visiting my colleague, Budd Hopkins and his Intruders Foundation, in New York, Mrs. Cortile graciously took me on a personal tour of the sites of the

events of that fateful night. The abduction occurred on November 30, 1989, at approximately 3:00 a.m. in New York City. There were many witnesses to this case, including two New York City police officers and a very influential political figure. During Mrs. Cortile's lecture, she spoke about her personal friendship with the late Cardinal John O'Connor, suggesting that the hierarchy of the Roman Catholic Church is interested in the UFO phenomenon. Also, during the seminar, two other witnesses, who, at the time of her abduction, were employed at the New York Post, came forward to briefly talk about what they saw that night. As a result of my New York visit, I expect that there will be more developments in the near future.

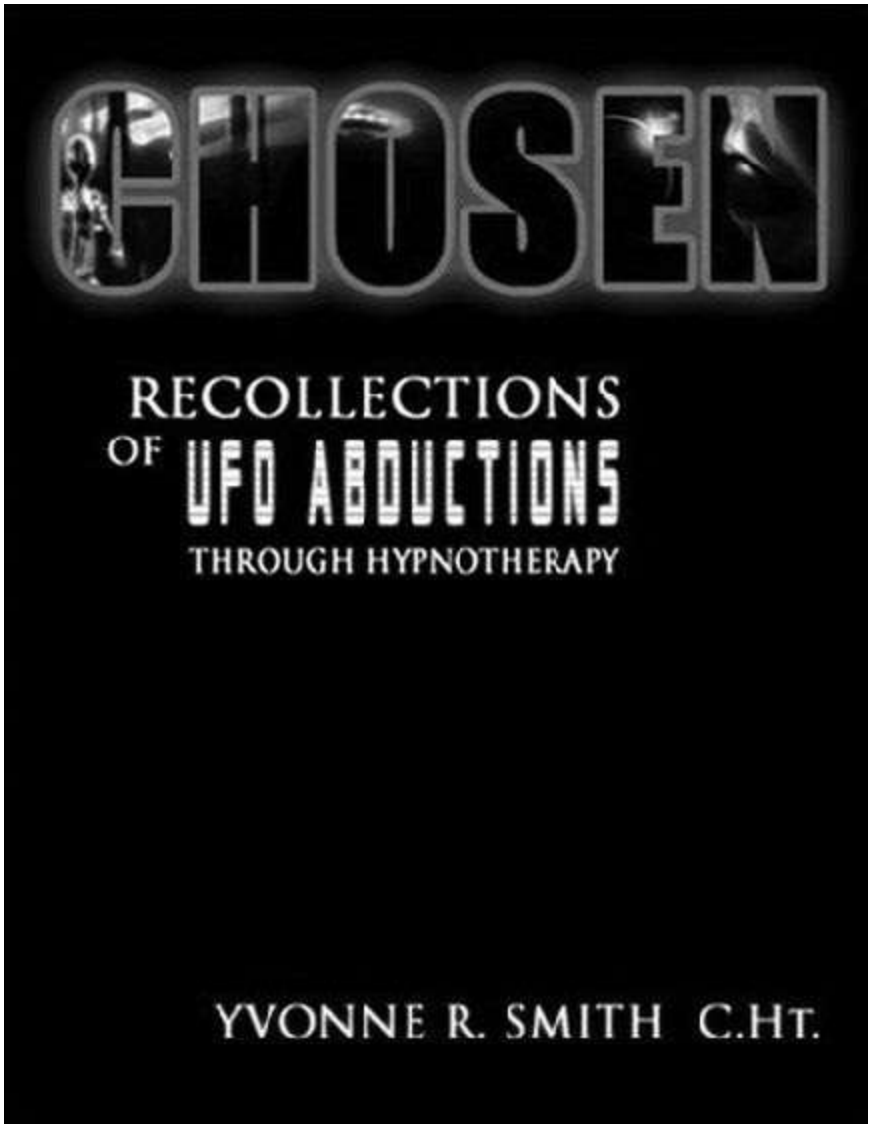
Paola: You met Colonel Corso in Italy for San Marino (conference) 1998. What did you think of him and his disclosure?

Yvonne: My visit to Italy and San Marino in 1998 was truly a memorable experience, where one of the highlights was meeting Colonel Phil Corso. As I was taking in the sites in Rome with the Colonel and his family, I enjoyed listening to him talk about the war and the time he spent in Rome, back in 1944 and 1945. His book *The Day After Roswell* is intriguing, as he describes how the 1947 Roswell crash helped develop reverse engineering. He wanted the truth to be known. He told me that the public and the young people had the right to have this information.

I have always appreciated that you, as a close friend of Colonel Corso, gave me the opportunity to meet him and hear some of his experiences.

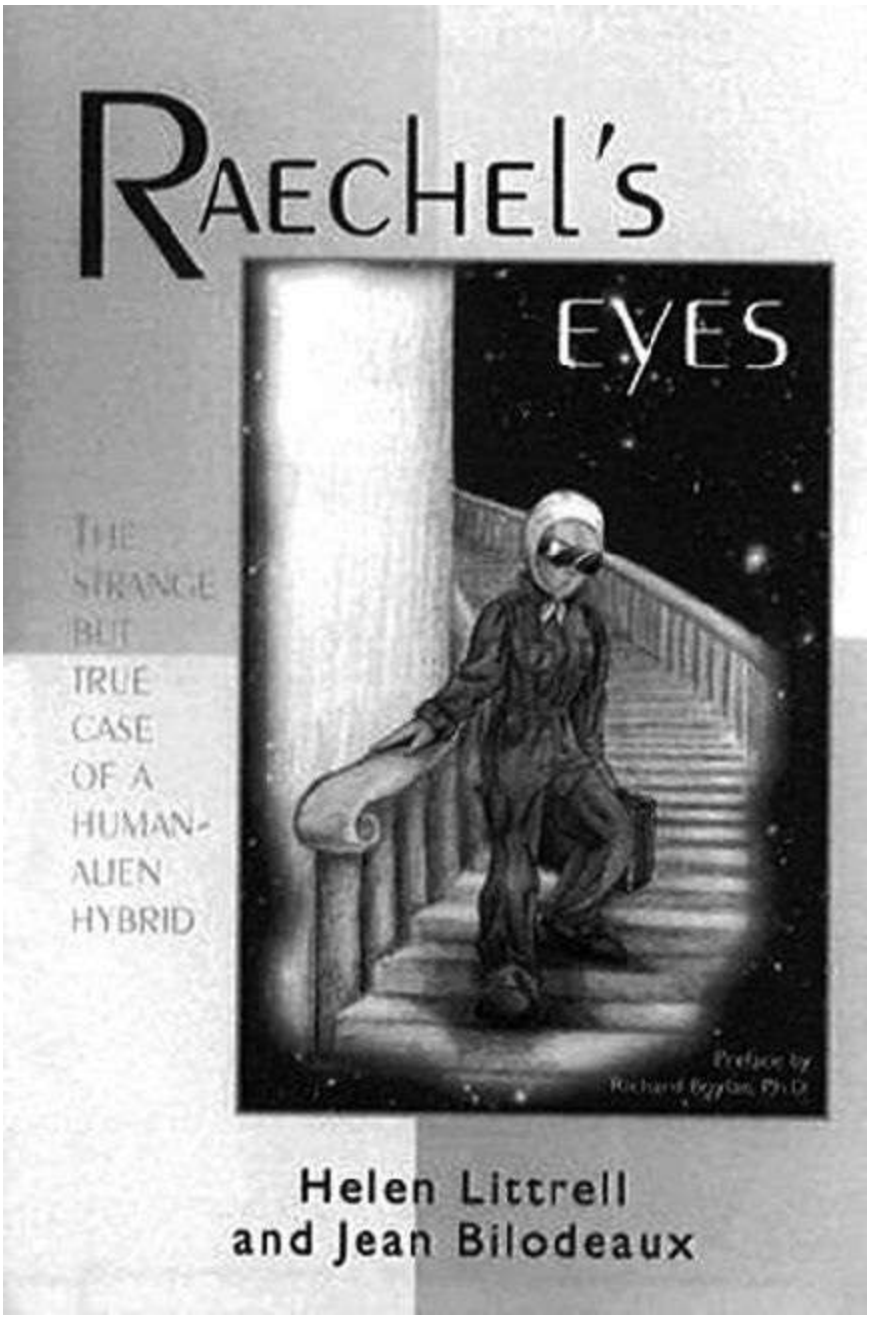
All of this has contributed to the body of knowledge I have accumulated over the years. Much of it is in my new book

Chosen.


CHOSEN
RECOLLECTIONS
OF UFO ABDUCTIONS
THROUGH HYPNOTHERAPY
YVONNE R. SMITH C.HT.

Aliens Living Among Us: Interview with Helen Littrell, author of Raechel's Eyes

Two years ago I became curious about a book *Raechel's Eyes* written by Helen Littrell and Jean Bilodeaux. I called Helen because it was her blind daughter who accepted the hybrid girl Raechel as a roommate. It was Jean who is a MUFON investigator who did a fine job of getting the details. I then met both women at the Laughlin, Nevada UFO congress some years ago. The story is too incredible and filled with political implications and policy issues. It reflects the Einstein-Oppenheimer document concerns about aliens relocating among us and the difficulties that might occur. It is a haunting story to a researcher like me to know that there are hybrids among us but then I remembered that Clifford Stone who worked on crash retrievals once told me that entire extraterrestrial families have been relocated on this planet. I strongly recommend this book to all who want to be acquainted with how we could possibly integrate *Cosmic Cultures* into our society. Talking with Helen recently, I realized that she remembers so much more and has more to tell. It is obvious that those people like her who have lived the experience will know the protocols involved and become our off-planet cultural consultants of the future.



Paola: Do you know for a fact that aliens or alien hybrids are among us? How?

Helen: Aliens and alien hybrids have been present among us on Earth for at least thirty-five years that I know of. The first personal contact that I am aware of with alien hybrids was when I met Raechel Nadim in the spring of 1972 when she had

been placed with my daughter, Marisa, as a roommate in an apartment complex near a junior college where they were both enrolled as freshmen. A few months later I visited a Top Secret military installation called Four Corners where I met another hybrid, a geneticist involved in an ongoing exchange program between his home planet, Zeta Reticuli, and the U.S. government. This was the same hybrid who helped with Raechel's upbringing after her rescue from a downed craft several years previously when she first arrived at Four Corners. I cannot say that I have had personal contact with an alien per se, although I have been abducted several times over the years. Although I always know when this is about to take place, there is never any conscious recall of events that took place during the abduction. I do, however, believe that alien beings are responsible for my abductions and I am quite certain that I have some level of interaction with them at those times.

Paola: Was there any military intervention that was involved that you saw or experienced?

Helen: Soon after meeting Raechel face to face at the apartment and realizing immediately that she was not human, her father, Air Force Colonel Nadim, set up a meeting between me, my daughter, and himself to explain her background as well as his. His first duty station was at Four Corners, a Top Secret underground installation that for all intents and purposes did not exist but was an integral part of the Humanization Project.

Raechel's special food and drinking liquid were left outside the apartment door at specified intervals by members of the Humanization Project who also appeared approximately bi-weekly to interview her and discuss her progress. I personally saw three of these so-called "men in black" as they were leaving the apartment. We met on the stairway, and their appearance

was extremely menacing and I was frightened. I also saw their vehicle in the parking lot on two different occasions. It was a vintage 1930s shiny black Cadillac that resembled a World War II German Army staff car. Its license plate was also unique.
Paola: How did you know Raechel was not human? Describe her.
Helen: As I left the apartment one evening after visiting my daughter, I met Raechel quite literally face to face. She apparently tripped on something and it was evident she was going to fall straightforward. I reached out and caught her arm to break the fall. In doing so, I found myself holding onto skin that in no way felt human. Her face was inches away from mine. The large, wrap-around sunglasses that she always wore indoors and out slipped down on her nose, revealing her huge eyes that slanted upward out onto her temples. They were avocado green in color with vertical black slits instead of pupils. I was positive that she was not human. A subsequent meeting with her father, Colonel Nadim, provided further acknowledgement that she was indeed a hybrid human/alien.

Raechel was about 5'4" in height, slightly built, with long, thin arms and legs. Her skin was a pale orange/greenish color, and her hair was wispy and light reddish-blonde. She was actually fairly attractive once one got past her unusual features.

Paola: Was she able to get along well with humans? What were her major disadvantages?

Helen: Raechel appeared to interact satisfactorily with humans, especially my daughter, Marisa. In fact, they became close friends and there were other classmates who knew her socially. A major disadvantage was her speech that was always somewhat mechanical and conveyed little emotion. Additionally, she had almost no font of knowledge that would

be normal in a young female college student. She dressed exclusively in jumpsuits with long sleeves and wore a scarf tied around her head and she wore large wrap-around sunglasses.

This outfit was worn indoors and out. However, since she remained somewhat withdrawn and deeply involved in her studies, none of these unique characteristics appeared to be problematic to her.

Paola: What happened to her?

Helen: Raechel disappeared suddenly and with no warning in late spring of 1972. My daughter returned to the apartment for lunch one day and discovered that all of Raechel's possessions were gone. Panicked, she called me at work and I, in turn, contacted a friend in Base Security at the installation where I worked, asking him to check on Colonel Nadim's whereabouts. Minutes later I was notified that he was also missing, as were all files pertaining to him. It was as if the two of them had dropped off the face of the earth.

In 1998 during hypnotic regression, I discovered that members of the Humanization Project had determined Raechel had acquired a greater degree of emotion than was desired, and that because of this they had disposed of her. I learned that they had pushed her down a steep, dark flight of stairs to her death. This was reinforced during an abduction in 2005 where the actual scenario was played out in front of my eyes and I was restrained forcibly from attempting to help her, allowed to be merely an observer.

Paola: What protocols do the citizens of Earth and we, as Galactic Diplomats, need to adopt for future cases like this? How can we be prepared?

Helen: It is obvious that as citizens of Earth in general, and

Galactic Diplomacy advocates in particular, we need to publicly acknowledge the huge number of human-alien hybrids already integrated into society. They mingle with us socially and in the workplace. We see them on the streets, in grocery stores, in our neighborhoods; in schools, restaurants, and hospitals…they are everywhere. It is imperative to acknowledge their presence. This is not a new situation; they have been here for millennia, although the number of off-planet beings is increasing exponentially. We must continue to speak out concerning our individual experiences although caution should be exercised since there is always a risk of job loss, estrangement with family and friends, and occasional government harassment to those who dare speak the truth. This gradually lessens individually and collectively as we continue to speak out, and more and more people are voicing acceptance of alien contact. It is wise to choose venues where it is safe, as these are the places where it will be most effective. We must continue encouraging our elected representatives to conduct hearings wherein we are allowed to tell of our experiences without fear of retribution.

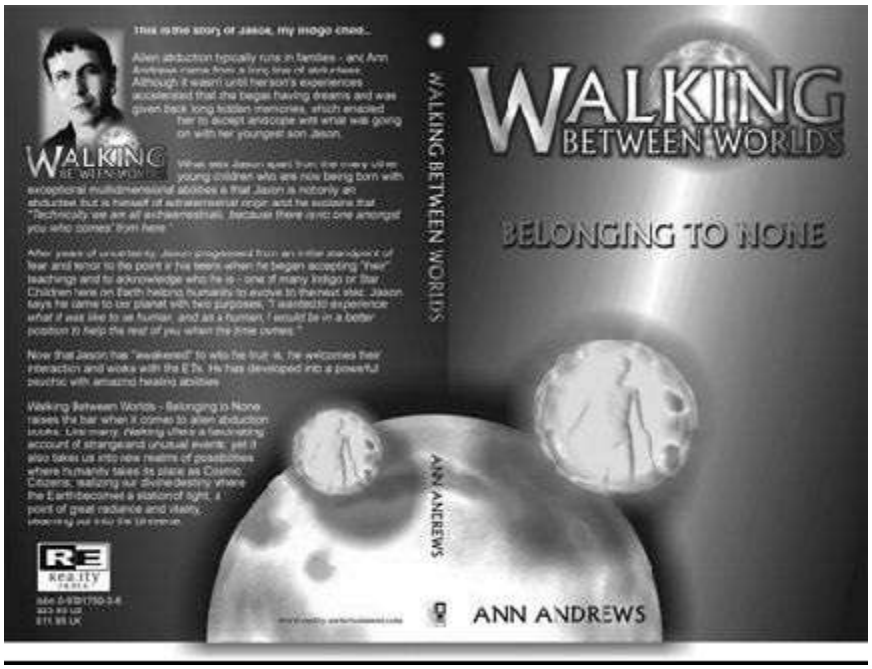
Those of us privileged to be guests on worldwide talk shows are in the forefront of the Galactic Diplomacy advocacy. We speak to millions of people daily, providing listeners with the courage they need to share their experiences of contact and abduction. Those of us who write books on the subject also offer silent courage to those previously too timid to speak out. What will people say? What will they think? What might they do? These are legitimate fears that prevent people from confessing that they have been abducted, or voicing the suspicion that they may have an alien child.

We must put aside our fears to speak out and then stand our ground once we have done so. The truth is that once a person

acknowledges interaction with a hybrid or an alien, the only consequences are the experience of a tremendous load having been lifted from their shoulders, and the power and knowledge that they are free to explore the new world that has been shown to them.

Indigo Children: The Jason Andrews Case

In *The Indigo Children: The New Kids Have Arrived*, Lee Carroll and Jan Tober define the phenomenon. Indigos, they write, share traits like high I.Q., acute intuition, self-confidence, resistance to authority and disruptive tendencies, which are often diagnosed as attention-deficit disorder, known as A.D.D., or attention-deficit hyperactivity disorder, or A.D.H.D. Offered as a guide for "the parents of unusually bright and active children," the book includes common criticisms of today's child rearing: that children are over-medicated; that schools are not creative environments, especially for bright students; and that children need more time and attention from their parents. But the book seeks answers to mainstream parental concerns in the paranormal.



In 2006, I made a real effort to cover more contactee cases and began by flying to Lincolnshire, England to the home of Jason Andrews. The book *Jason: My Indigo Child* was written by

Ann Andrews and her son Jason. Paul and Ann Andrews, Jason, and Jason's wife Jacqui––who live nearby in their own apartment––greeted me. The Andrews house is located on two powerful lay-lines and is filled with paranormal phenomena. This includes entities, ghostly figures, UFO sightings, dimensional shifting and all the other situations that Ann Andrews recounts in detail in her book. I can attest to the fact that these things are true because as I was a guest in their home for the first three nights, but asked to go to a motel the last three nights. The second night there I heard my name clearly called by a man with a British accent in the room where I was sleeping, in Jason's old room. The third night, I took some photos of unusual phenomena in the hall where the staircase was. I heard footsteps all night long of someone walking up and down the stairs. Ann and Paul Andrews are used to this and it does not disturb them. But they have had twenty-plus years of someone taking their son and of finding him in odd places, twenty years of ghostly people in their yard, and twenty years of being watched by ETs. To give the reader a better insight into what Jason is all about, I have included the transcript of parts of an interview that he agreed to do some time ago for the *Discovery Channel.*

Pictured: Jason's room. Photo by Paola Harris.

Question: It has been well documented now that you possess certain abilities, which are unusual to say the least! You claim that you have endured abductions by alien beings for most of your life, but you are now at a point in your life where you both welcome their intrusion and actually learn from them. You even go as far as to state that 'they' have awakened you to the reality that you yourself are of alien origins. As 'they' have taught you so much, could you explain, perhaps, how you are able to travel astrally and astrally project yourself?

Jason: These two are not the same thing; they are different. To astrally project myself to another place, I simply concentrate and think hard that I want to see that place; all of that place; I want to be there in the same reality in which I exist here, to be able to see and be seen. Part of me, myself, my energy then goes to that place and sends images to my brain. I can even communicate with people whilst there and again my brain is able to store the conversation as if I had physically been present. Obviously, as most of my energies are still here within

the physical, I suppose I must seem like an apparition; a ghost or something whilst I'm there, but I can still walk around and talk in this reality. It's a bit like watching a television program whilst doing loads of other stuff at the same time. Astral travel is much easier and most people can do it, whether conscious of being able to do this or not. It happens when you are out of body. You are able to move easily and freely through objects, through walls, etc., and just wander around in that state. The more you are able to master this, the faster you are able to move and can take yourself anywhere. As you don't have to worry about breathing or drowning or anything, you can go anywhere––even space.

When asked about the knowledge that he was given that made him special, Jason wisely answered in the following way. I realized that Jason is very wise for his age and he could be speaking here about some of the principles I discussed in this book about the cybernetic entities called the *Council of Nine* or the *Nine*. Although he may not be referring to them specifically, the concept of *the Source* or God is very interesting. Jason answers like this:

"Let me first say that no-one ever knows everything. That is for the Source; the One. And you're wrong because it isn't a case of knowing; of having immense knowledge but the art is in knowing how to use that knowledge; having the key to it if you like. Know how to use the knowledge that you have and you will go far.

"My understanding is that aeons ago there was the void and out of the void some sort of energy began to be. As this energy grew, it became powerful and, over time, the Source split itself into other energies much like itself. There were twelve forms of

energy to be exact. This is where your Bible gets confused. The scribes write about twelve disciples, twelve tribes of Israel, etc. They are really referring to the twelve entities, if you like, produced by *the Source*. These new forms dispersed throughout the void and gradually created the Universe. As the decades passed, their knowledge increased. So, technically, your 'big bang' theory would be correct in a way if you perceive that everything is energy and it reacts against itself. Of course, the more intelligent the twelve became; the more independent they were and, to my knowledge, three of them committed the ultimate sin and went against the Source by interfering with the creations they had helped to mould. As I said earlier, we can only advise and help whenever possible but we can never interfere directly. The consequences of their actions were that they were cast out from the Source (you know like your Bible says, "that God cast out the Devil"). Doesn't mean that they were evil as such but you can't ignore the ultimate and only rule. The nine remaining have visited you from time to time throughout your history and you have known them as great men; like Jesus Christ, the Buddha, Allah, etc., but they've been to other places too throughout the Universe and have been acclaimed in much the same way. I do some healing in the physical sense when my parents allow visitors to come to the house and, as with all healing; it is all about moving the energies around in peoples' bodies and unblocking them. There are no guarantees but if the damage isn't long term, then I can usually help. In these circumstances, I like to try and teach the people who come for healing how to sort themselves out in the future and for most of them this has been very successful."

Jason speaks about *indigo children* or *star children* from direct experience and I think that this helps the reader understand that there is a new generation being born that can

easily navigate between two worlds and that they use telepathy. This is the generation that might indeed be able to communicate with an "orb" or an intelligent light being. Jason Andrews explains it like this: "The Star Kids are mostly born to parents where one of whom is an alien abductee, whether they are aware of this or not, but most parents do know. These children are incredibly bright even at a very young age and they know from the beginning that, whilst they love their parents, they understand that their real home is elsewhere, out there somewhere amongst the stars. This feeling often fills them with sadness; a longing to explore and discover just who they really are although they know that when they are ready, this information will be revealed to them, just as it was to me. They will find for the most part that they don't fit in with conventional society and its' demands. As they grow, they feel almost limiting in their physical bodies, as they know that they are so cumbersome and that they themselves are capable of so much more, but this has to be confirmed to them. I use the word confirmed as, like I said, these kids know exactly who they are, and more to the point, just why they are here at this precise moment in time. Ultimately, they are your salvation. They are the new race of humanity who, if allowed, will lead the World on its' pathway to peace and understanding. These kids are now being recognized the world over. Dr. Richard Boylan in America is working with a lot of them. This is happening too in Australia and, to a lesser extent, in the United Kingdom too. A lot of these so called 'experts' are skeptical about their abilities––and their motives––whilst still other experts put them under the supervision of psychiatrists *for their own good*.

Protocol Seven
International Cooperation and Research Criteria

We should encourage international cooperation. We need an International Panel to create these Protocols. This is about planet Earth, not about any individual country. We are one species: human

- Can we cooperate in good faith with our own colleagues on an International level to develop some scientific criteria for investigation?
- Serpo: Can we create a planetary exchange or has it happened already?
- Who speaks for planet Earth?

Travis Walton Speaks

"I think the greatest lack in UFO research today is a lack of scientific methodology and rigor. Researchers should get together in a summit and decide on rules and protocol for separating good cases from those that are not. Also, it should be established what methods are best for investigating and discovering new knowledge from the good cases." ––Travis Walton (OUR-J Magazine, Japan)

Pictured: Travis Walton presents Black and White award to Paola Harris.

It is appropriate that I use this quote by Travis to lead into the protocols for investigation plus the protocols for the contact itself. Travis and Dana Walton have come to Rome twice and on one occasion stayed with me four days so I was able to talk to Travis on an informal basis. He is the same Travis as the one from 1975, incredibly honest and unaffected by his fame. After the incident he did not work in the forest very much. He worked for a number of years at a paper mill that manufactured wood trim and moldings. For the last three years, he has been working at a mill that makes paper from recycled paper material.

The thing that impressed me most was his ability to really reflect on his contact and look at it in perspective over so many years. His questioning of the incident with possible government involvement. He says that the “two blonde beings” took him off the craft down a ramp into what could possibly be a

government hangar. This brings up the *"their stuff or our stuff?"* scenario I talked about earlier. He thinks there may be some governmental involvement since the hanger appeared to be a military hangar. Travis also says his case was not sufficiently investigated in a scientific way. He has a specific example of this. Travis claims that there was evidence that the tree growth in the forest was altered in the spot where the incident took place. By measuring the rings, the trees seemed to be growing 30% faster. Tragically this is a moot point now since most of the trees have burned down in a forest fire. We researchers waited thirty years too long to investigate this.

I also asked the obvious question, "What was the UFO doing there?" I asked about what was in the area. Dana, Travis' wife, told me that there had been some nuclear testing on the Nevada border nearby and some of the fallout was blamed for the rising cases of leukemia in bordering towns. She added there were quite a few court cases pending because of this. Is it possible something was monitoring the area? Is it possible that Travis reckless behavior by getting out of the truck interfered with this and the bolt of energy actually stopped his heart?

I was always wondering what the crystal-like devise was. It fell to the floor when he awoke so violently. Were they reviving him? Greys do not usually exit gracefully when you threaten them with a flashlight type object. There are anomalies in the case, anomalies that need to be studied. It may paint a more humane picture of the often, cruel scenario interpreted by abduction researchers. The protocols for contact cannot be applied to someone who is terrorized. Travis was totally terrorized and in retrospect he may have acted differently.

It is interesting that when asked how he was transformed by this contact he says, "Before the incident I was open to the idea of UFOs and ETs because of sightings in years past by people I

knew––and even myself. However, I had never seen anything that I could be completely certain was extraterrestrial. After the incident, I became more certain of the reality of UFOs and ETs. Some craft are possibly ours." He says, "My experience was so traumatic that I still wish that it never happened but I have gained some very valuable knowledge about life and the universe." If that incident was a demonstration of our technology, what were the two races of aliens doing there? If it was a hologram in 1975, what messages were given to the abductees including Travis? Who is promoting the evil alien scenario? All questions researchers should investigate. There always seems to be a nuclear involvement somehow. Both Einstein and Oppenheimer warned us about our dangerous nuclear involvement in the draft document of 1947. These are geopolitical concerns as are their possible monitoring of our nuclear contamination of the planet.

The nuclear question has been posed and intentionally ignored because most of us feel we can do nothing about it as we sit passively by.

Serpo and *Exempt from Disclosure* Enter the UFO Culture

Steven Spielberg's film *Close Encounters of the Third Kind* depicted twelve astronauts (some were women) who were selected to go with the aliens to their home world. Is this one of the foundations for *Operation Serpo*? Is the alien Exchange Program a fabrication, or was Spielberg shown the document by Reagan so he could include it into his movie script? I cannot ignore that parts, if not the core, of the film could be true. We need to consider the combination of disclosure "leaks" this year (2012) very curious. The release of the Robert Collins/ Richard Doty book *Exempt from Disclosure* in conjunction with the SERPO Anonymous revelations makes one think. What is going on here? How much disinformation is mixed with this information? It was Bill Ryan, in 2005, who counseled us all to examine carefully this story; to see that this could have been a logical progression to the contact of the Fifties and the government agreements made. For the open-minded researcher, it is an opportunity to "connect some dots."

Project Serpo is a term in ufology circles referring to an alleged exchange program between *ultra Top Secret levels* in the government of the United States and an alien home world called Serpo. It is speculated that Serpo is an (as yet officially uncharted) inhabited planet in the Zeta Reticuli system. Zeta Reticuli is a mapped binary star some thirty-nine light years from Earth. In the 1990s, it was thought that a planet had been detected here using advanced telescopes but that was later recanted by scientists who stated that it was merely a "wobble" caused by a pulsar. This has only increased speculation of a cover-up. (www.serpo.com)

Bill Ryan, retired AFOSI Special Agent Richard Doty and author Whitley Strieber *(Unknown Country)* have all discussed *Project Serpo.* It is an alleged secret exchange program of twelve military personnel to Serpo (and an unknown number of their kind to Earth) between the years 1965-1978. Ryan explained that he is a participant in a private ufology email list moderated by Victor Martinez, and that in early November 2005, he started receiving plausible messages from an anonymous contributor revealing information about *Project Serpo* which Ryan has subsequently chronicled on his website. Bill Ryan reports on his website that there is said to exist a total of 3,000 pages of information on the project, which may be being released in installments; including transcripts (with original errors) of debriefing audiotapes possibly conducted under hypnosis. According to the "anonymous" source, Serpo is an Earth-sized planet with a population of around 650,000 alien beings (known in Ufology as EBEN). An EBEN who allegedly survived the Roswell crash was said to have used a communication device to set up the exchange. Of the twelve who went on the exchange, eight returned (though all have since died), one died on Serpo, one died en route to the planet, and two remained there. Bill Ryan believes that the story has credibility partially because some of the physics appears to contain marked anomalies.

Then in a timely manner, the book *Exempt from Disclosure* surfaced. The book title itself describes the status of classified information on UFOs. Veteran researcher, Robert Wood, (MJ-12 documents) reviewed this book and verifies some facts by saying, "The record is unambiguous, powerful, and almost unarguable that there are many aspects of the UFO or flying saucer reports that have been classified over the years, and this is the first book that provides enough detail to convince many

that we have had a deeply covert involvement with the UFO topic from the beginning. The two main authors, Robert M. Collins and Richard C. Doty, supported in part with documents provided by Tim Cooper, have painted what impresses this reviewer as an approximately accurate history of the handling of this topic inside the deepest confines of counterintelligence. Collins, a retired Air Force Intelligence Officer with the Foreign Technology Division, and Doty, retired counter intelligence Air Force Office of Special Investigations agent, have put their knowledge together to create an impressively coherent history of the internal and external relationships surrounding the UFO topic in the United States. They identify specific people with seeming accuracy as to their involvement, and begin the story of their interaction in the fall of 1986. The book begins with an appropriate chronology of the involvement with other interested (and usually "cleared") people, followed by the description of who has been involved with MJ-12 (the UFO management program) from the beginning, supported by photographs of those participating, many of whom are identified. More recent individuals that impressed this reviewer involved in MJ-12 as of 1986 included Senator Claiborne Pell and Dr. Carl Sagan. Tim Cooper contributed direct quotes from his own father, an Air Force MSgt, who has high credibility supported by a certificate of commendation from General Le May for his contribution to the *Air Force UFO Program*.

I, myself, read the book and was impressed by the amount of information but distressed by the depth of the cover-up. The intelligence community enjoys seeing researchers chasing their tails in an effort to get to the truth, a truth that is hidden from us. But as the Honorable Paul Hellyer reminded me: Although it may be shocking, "the truth shall set us free." We must keep

searching.

Protocol Eight
Orbs, Spheres and Intra-dimensional Beings

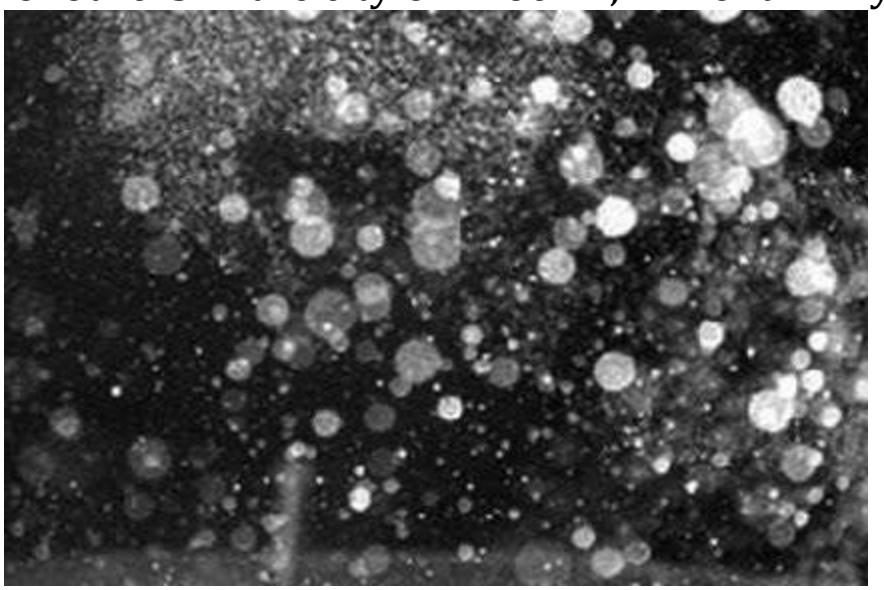
We need to create a way to communicate with orbs, spheres and intra-dimensional beings. We need to accept the existence of an inter-dimensional reality.

- So where do we place orbs and light beings in our mental data banks?
- What new cameras or technologies can be used to record them?
- Do some craft or aliens first manifest themselves as light forms?

The Phoenix Lights: Mass Contact in Phoenix, Arizona, March 13, 1997

One review of Dr. Lynne Kitei's documentary called *The Phoenix Lights* says, "It is wide-ranging and insightful, with some original ideas thrown into the speculative mix. In the end, what is most striking about Kitei's coverage of the Phoenix Lights is the deeply spiritual significance that many of the people she interviewed ascribe to the phenomenon. Some declare that they have been irrevocably transformed by their sightings; their minds flung wide open by experiences that seem impossible to comprehend. Others find meaning and significance in the sense of peacefulness, awe and wonder they experienced at the time of their encounters, recounting deep feelings of 'appreciation for being alive and witnessing it.' Since this is an *Orb phenomena* although many saw a boomerang craft, we need to consider the implications of these ETs showing themselves to Dr. Kitei and her family as well as

hundreds of others in the city of Phoenix, Arizona. Why?



Pictured: Orbs at CSETI Mt. Shasta meditation.

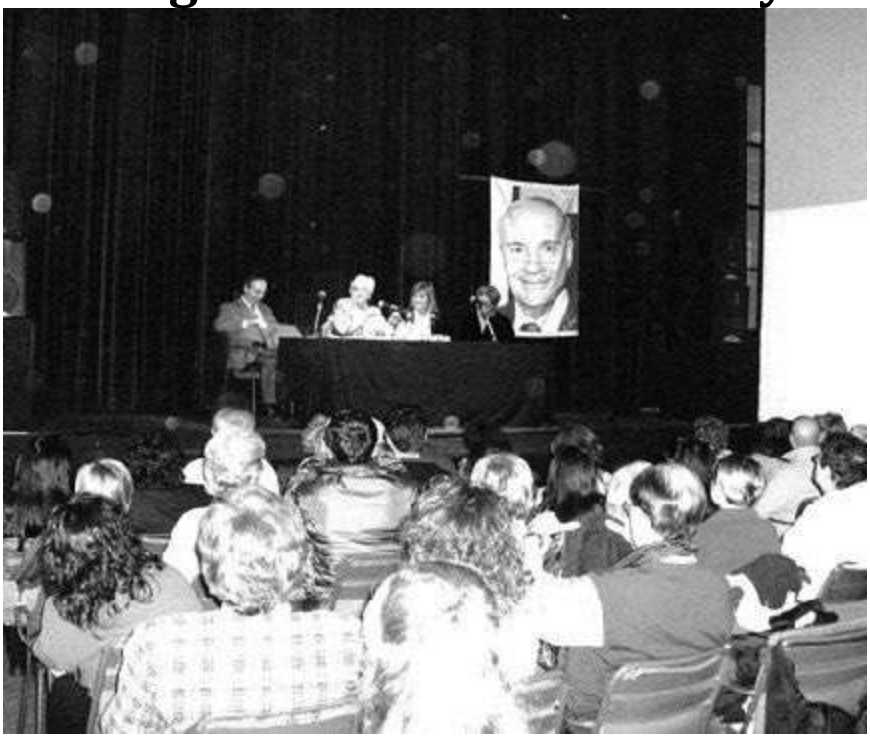
Dr. Kitei herself, however, is surely the most profoundly affected, having committed much of her life to a passionate quest to understand her experiences. “Is humankind at large on the verge of understanding what experiencers of unexplained phenomena have known for millennia?” She writes in her book about the Phoenix Lights, “Are we now moving towards our next evolutionary level, the positive maturation and spiritual advancement of consciousness itself?”

Intelligent Light Beings can be extraterrestrial visitors. They range from globes of light to small gray beings, to actual people who look like us. The extraterrestrial culture has grown around the presumed crash at Roswell, New Mexico in 1947 where a craft fell on the Brazel ranch supposedly brought down by the powerful radar that was used at the *White Sands Testing Facility* during the atomic bomb tests. The crash was cleaned up immediately and pieces taken to Wright Patterson Field in Ohio. It seems that six small grey bodies were recovered, one remaining alive and taken to the Nellis AFB Facility in Nevada

which today is called Area 51. Over the years, many hundreds and thousands of people say they have had contact with extraterrestrial life. Swiss Farmer Billy Meier says that in the ’70s he was visited by tall blond blue-eyed Pleiadians, which leads us to believe that the Cosmos is teaming with all types of Extraterrestrial visitors.

In his article “Mysterious phenomena are all around us, and within us,” Steve Hammons on October 30, 2005, says, “Millions of people around the world are interested in *unconventional phenomena*. These subjects include UFOs, crop circles, extra-sensory perception (ESP) and ‘remote viewing’. near-death experiences (NDE) and life-after-death concepts and similar kinds of topics. In some cases, modern science is starting to understand many of these phenomena. Emerging understanding of physics explains the possible operation of some of these things. They may just reflect how the universe works, how Nature works. Even our military and intelligence communities have investigated these subjects. The Army, CIA and Defence Intelligence Agency (DIA) have been involved in ESP and remote viewing for decades.”

The "Ball of Light" Phenomena in Italy



Pictured: Journalist Giuditta Dembech and Paola Harris at unveiling of her recorded interviews with famous Italiam medium and psychic "Rol." Notice the orbs in photo.

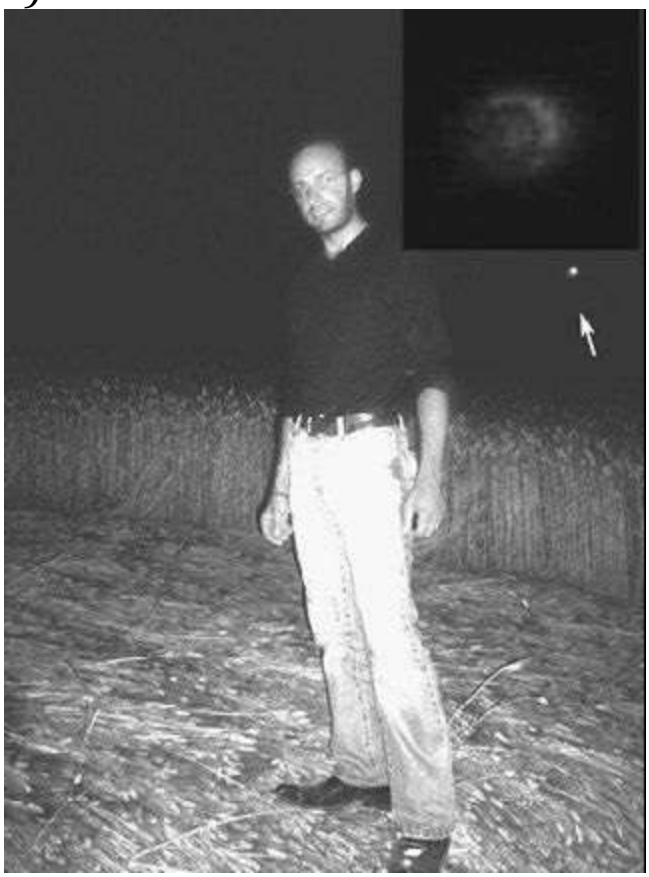
Ball of Light (BOL)
The account of Adriano Forgione, Editor
X-Times and *Fenix* magazines

Here is some starling new information from the field research I did on June 26, 2005, on the crop formation which actually appeared on June 24, 2005, in Montegranaro (Ascoli Piceno), Italy.

Before I left the formation at 9 p.m., after two hours of research on the Montegranaro site with major, Mr. Gianni Basso, I took a last photo with the digital camera belonging to my friend, Ufologist Pino Morelli.

Recently, while scanning my archive, I was surprised to see a yellow-blue glowing light in the picture, behind my shoulders. I did not notice it in the darkness that night. However, it seems

to be eight to ten meters away from me. There was nothing there, no houses, no streets or passages, only the rest of the field and some trees. Nobody else noticed the presence of the BOL *(ball of light)* at that moment.



Pictured: Adriano Forgione in a field at Montegranaro. Notice the ball of light captured in the background sky.

In the color version there is a glowing yellow-red corona around it, confirming the anomalous origin and the high temperature of the object, in complete accordance with the usual eyewitness testimony.

I am sure it is not the result of the humidity and water in the air.

The incredible thing is that, right in the center of a soft cyan color BOL, there are the features of *a child's face,* which seems to look at us (me in particular). I don't think this is an illusion.

The features of this BOL are exactly the face of a child with an expression of surprise. It is the first time we have seen a BOL that looks like this. We here in Italy find it incredible.

Protocol Nine
Galactic Diplomacy and CSETI Protocols

It is important to establish who is in charge of formal contact. It must be done on a planetary level.

- Can world governments unite to study the UFO phenomena?
- How do we choose galactic ambassadors?
- How do we develop effective protocols, similar to the CSETI protocols, and how do we do it with mutual respect?

Contact Without Fear

President Ronald Reagan first disclosed his reoccurring thoughts *about an alien threat* during a speech at the Fallston High School in Maryland December 4, 1985, when he spoke about his first summit with General Secretary Gorbachev in Geneva. According to a White House transcript, Reagan remarked that during his five-hour private discussions with Gorbachev, he told (Gorbachev) to think, "…how easy his task and mine might be in these meetings that we held if suddenly there was a threat to this world from some other species from another planet outside in the universe. We'd forget all the little local differences that we have between our countries. Unfortunately, with the wars and discords on *Earth*, it might take this scenario to unite the planet. But there are those who do not agree as they see the alien presence as *benevolent* and *beneficial*. It is Dr. Steven Greer who developed the CSETI protocols for contact and, so far, has been the most respectful earthly ambassador.

Founder of the 2001 *Disclosure Project*, Dr. Steven Greer

shared secretive information about the ET presence that came to him from corroborated sources. One of his associates, who worked with Neil Armstrong at Purdue, said that Armstrong told him that once they stepped out of the lunar module on the Moon, they were literally surrounded by ET vehicles. Further, Armstrong was approached to be part of the *Disclosure Project* in 1997, but declined, over threats that his family would be killed. Dr. Greer commented that fear and intimidation have kept many witnesses from coming forward.

It is interesting that in the Einstein-Oppenheimer document, this statement appears:

"Now we come to the problem of determining what to do if the inhabitants of celestial bodies or (EBE) desire to settle here. They mention if they are politically organized and possess a culture similar to our own, then they should be recognized as an independent people."

I believe that this appraisal is the only respectful one. What is interesting is that they suggest that a superior form of colonization would have to be conceived if we, as a planet, do not have political unity and we don't. This superior form of colonization would come about with the "tacit approval" of the Supra United Nations. Here the United Nations is seen by the Einstein Eisenhower document, as a one-world government similar to what Dr. Mitchell suggested was needed for communication. The suggestion is made that the United Nations become a Supra-national organization and vote to represent the nations of Earth in this negotiation with extra-terrestrial visitors.

Ambassadors to the Universe Program: Protocols for Contact!
Interview with Dr. Steven Greer

Exclusive Interview with Dr. Steven Greer
Crestone, Colorado
July 4, 2005

Paola: Steven, what is the focus of your career at the present time?

Greer: My main focus is still the CSETI encounters that we are doing now like this one at Crestone, Colorado. But there are different levels of this. We have people who train people like Dr. Loder and his people. There are others that get a group together and take them out in smaller groups, and have done 20 or 30 of these expeditions. They know what they are doing. The big trainings like this of 20 or 30 people I do. The main ones are *Mt. Shasta, Crestone* and *Joshua Tree Wilderness Area* in California. The core basis of our focus is the fact that humans are going to have to learn to contact these non-human beings in a peaceful way and right now there is no initiative in the world that is doing this but ours. There are a few in Latin America that sort of have the same concept. Unfortunately the political structures have not dealt with the issue and the covert programs are military and hardly diplomatic. I mean, they are actually increasingly hostile. What we are doing is a citizen's diplomacy effort and we have laid down protocols that are interrelated with very spiritually based and we believe that we are spiritually conscious beings and there is that one mind of the cosmos that shines in every being. This is the fundamental basis for helping to make contact and because extraterrestrial

technologies interface with thought and interface with what some people call the etheric or astral level of things, we have found that we can put together protocols that involve electromagnetic instruments like lasers and BP signals using this concept of sort of the center of the Universal Mind. In that center, we begin to see in sort of a remote sensing where the ETs are and connect with them mentally. We have had amazing contact; sightings and even things have come right to the field and what have you all over the world. So the concept is a very adept one because it integrates the mind, the physical.

Paola: This is a very spiritual place here in Crestone. It has an incredible energy. There are many religions represented in this valley. I saw a Zen center and an ashram, and a center of Carmelite nuns.

Greer: There is a beautiful white stupa with the gold on top authorized by the Dalai Llama.

Paola: Yes I saw that.

Greer: Yes. Ambassador Jim George from Canada was involved and was asked to build the stupa here and he did it. He is an advisor to our group and has spoken to Canadian officials about the energy problem and alternative energies. I just spoke in Montreal and there were over a thousand people there. I also spoke at the University of Toronto about this contact and my desire to develop alternative energy devices.

Paola: So is the focus of your ET communication training a type of Universal Cosmic Consciousness?

Greer: Yes. You see the fundamental basis of being an ambassador to non-humans life forms, as I see it, is the understanding what it is, what's the nexus where we all have some point in common. Well, it is not going to be that we are

human with those who are non-human. So it is that we are conscious. And so, I remember Monsignor Balducci saying "we are all children of God" but there is this light of Conscious Mind, this one spirit within us all. There is One Spirit shining through all of us, so by relating to that which, I feel is very important that I train people to do is take people to higher states of consciousness. I am taking people who are ready for that to a cosmic consciousness development retreat in Palm Springs in November, 2005. We will use meditation techniques and the contact techniques to be able to center and experience Cosmic Mind and then remotely view, using Cosmic Mind. We don't use the military system. It is very primitive. If we understand that the mind is omni-present and the mind, where you and I are awake right now; it is a singularity and we can settle into that "non-local" or expanded reality. You can see everywhere. People come on these retreats who have spent big bucks trying remote viewing and get these breakthroughs in three or four days because I am teaching them to stop and be still and center ourselves and then use some specific techniques that I have learned to be able to remotely sense places and distant different objects. This training is very rigorous. And I think that people have to understand that the fundamental reason why that is important is that if you don't connect or relate to that aspect of Universal Mind, then how are you going to relate to non-human people? It doesn't make any sense. Think about it. They are not going to have the same emotional quality; they are not going to have the same mental aptitude; they are not going to have the same fountain of knowledge; they are not going to be biologically the same. So where are you connected? It is in this "conscious mind" which is the spirit!

So in this kind of world, you not only have a diplomatic foundation for communication, but you also have a functional

paradigm because their technology; it has been recorded at least in the ’40s and ’50s if not longer, they have devices that are electronic that interface with thought. They are not communicating with stellar systems in using microwave systems. They are using a sub-electromagnetic signal that interfaces with what the mystics used to call astral or thought energy and it is scientific reproducible. We have covert programs in the United States that develop these systems as well.

Paola: Edgar Mitchell used “thought transfer” from the moon and it worked!

Greer: Right, it does work. He and I talked about this. Every human being is a quantum hologram of the whole universe. In other words, I love this Sufi saying: “think yourself a puny form when within yourself the Universe is folded?” It is a rhetorical question. You are not a small thing. Within each person the entirety of the cosmic universe is unfolded literally. And opening to that you cannot only communicate with these extraterrestrial life forms but you can also begin to relate to a universal aspect of yourself. So you don’t have to react to xenophobically when you encounter the diversity of extraterrestrial life.

Paola: Right. But, we already have trouble with diversity here on Earth.

Greer: My God, we are blowing people apart. We are spending a trillion dollars a year in military spending. So if we are going to be talking about a serious effort to become ambassadors to these other civilizations that are obviously involved with earth and obviously concerned with what we are doing, then those ambassadors, in my mind, have to be knowledgeable about the

universal component of consciousness. So I find that giving this fundamental foundation of being an interplanetary ambassador is how I train people. That is the basis of what we are doing. A lot of people say that is very far out but it is actually simple; because if you don't have something that you are anchored to that is deeper than the human, animal, intellectual emotional state, then you are not going to relate, first of all; you can barely relate to another human from another culture. Look how different an Italian is to a Japanese? You are talking about different star systems and people, and so to be able to transcend that level of diversity, and the diversity is fine if you are able to keep that perspective. But what happens is the diversity overwhelms you or that becomes a cause of conflict, which is what human beings normally do. You know someone looks different, thinks differently. If they are gay, they are straight; they are black, they are white; they are Arab, they are Iraqi; they are Suni, they are Shiite; they are Protestant, they are Catholic; whatever it is we find that for a reason to blow each other apart. Well, we cannot export that kind of thinking to the next stage of human development, which is the cosmic moment. This is a cosmic moment. The death throws of what is happening on Earth today is that this diversity is becoming a cause for conflict. It is really a spiritual problem as I see it. Now, I am not a religious person at all, but I am a spiritual person.

Paola: But you are optimistic? Right? You could get real pessimistic if you look at the reality of this. You are developing an alternative.

Greer: Very optimistic. The whole thing is I think that we have to create a world that is commiserating with the challenges of our time and we have failed to do that. In other words, we are 100 or 150 years into this chapter of human history and yet we

have refused to make the fundamental changes spiritually, socially, politically, geopolitically and technologically that would support a civilization commensurate with this time. For instance, we know that there have been technologies that could have eliminated world poverty and pollution that could have been here for 75 years. They went deep black in the 50s. The reality is that the human situation has been in a sense, retarded from an evolutionary developmental point of view for at least 50 to 100 years and this is why we see so many imbalances today. I'm optimistic that it will be brought back. But it is going to take courage, good leadership, and some sacrifice that we had to face in our group. It is going to take some thinking in how we are going to create a civilization that is commensurate with the challenges of the time. There are many power dynamics working in this dysfunctional world that need to be fixed.

Paola: You articulate that really well, Steven. You are one of the only people who have it together. I mean you synthesize this problem well. Other people have little pieces of it. They are talking about Zero Point energy here. They do not look at the spiritual; they don't even talk about ET communication. You synthesized the whole entire planetary situation and offered a possible solution in the CSETI Ambassador Program of Consciousness. You said you were working on three things. What are they?

Greer: *CSETI, the Ambassadors to the Universe program*, the other is the *Disclosure Project.* We are still doing the *Disclosure Project* because we have a website with ten million people on it. People don't realize that *The Disclosure Project* video reached more people, than those who watch CNN every night. I am still meeting with members of Congress. Within the last year, I'm

trying to say "look, this information exists and it is not only related to UFOs and extraterrestrials, but also to alternative energies and propulsion systems that would solve most of our problems." And so Disclosure still has to go on and we have a disclosure some of the new top secret witnesses we have and government officials including a former Clinton administration official. Also, in technology through the Orion project, where we can bring in scientists who can testify to the existence of new energy and propulsion systems, and how they have been systematically acquired and suppressed by large trans-national corporate interests representative's program. We also have dozens of people all over the world who host *Disclosure Project* screenings and meetings. So that is still going on.

We would love to do *Disclosure II.* Many have yet to understand that after we did the Disclosure Project event in 2001, we doubled the number of military assets in terms of the number of witnesses because they came out of the closet. As a matter of fact, a retired Air Force general who has knowledge of these covert programs is one of them. The problem is that we do not have the funding to do it. We have got to find a source of institutional support and funding to be able to do the next level of it, or it is impossible to carry forward. There is no funding for anything serious and this is the whole tragedy of this effort. They just don't know what to make of it. You've got to connect it to something meaningful. The fact is that it is meaningful because there are enormous implications to the secrecy, and the secrecy is not because of the extraterrestrial component. The secrecy in the world UFO movement is because of the technology that would make obsolete all the oil and gas and coal power. It has become a carnival and caricature of itself, yet we are dealing with incredibly important things and my understanding is that the intelligence community which really

does run the UFO subculture, wants to keep it that way. Now what I'd like to do in the next year or two is do another level of disclosure where we would bring in more witnesses. Most people post 9-11 really doesn't care if there are UFO and ETs out there. But, the majority of Americans do believe UFOs are real.

The late astronaut Gordon Cooper said that he had spoken to, then, Secretary of Defense, William Cohen, about footage of a UFO landing at Edwards AFB. Cohen, however, was told that no such footage exists, even though Cooper said he had seen and handled it. Former CIA Director, William Colby, had an ET energy device that he was going to share with the Disclosure group, but just before he was going to do this; his body was found drowned off the Potomac. So secrecy is taking its toll and it is time for full Disclosure.

Steven Greer and I strongly agree with the honorable Paul Hellyer, when Hellyer stated at the first Exopolitics Conference in Kwona, Hawaii in June of 2006:

"Evidence indicates that the survival of the planet as a reasonably friendly and hospitable environment is at stake, and that vested interests may be blocking plans to save it before it is too late. Even worse, the Military Industrial Complex, that General Dwight Eisenhower warned us about, is creating and producing weapons systems designed to confront visitors from space and, in the process, is proceeding to a situation that could be a sure-fire recipe for a possible conflict. One hesitates to contemplate the unknown and potentially disastrous consequences. Only an early and complete disclosure of the truth can save us from our folly."

Let's Change the Prime Directive

The Agony and the Ecstasy of Ufology: The Emergence of *Exopolitics* and Galactic Diplomacy as Academic Disciplines

In the these days when the fate of the planet is hanging by a thread in the Middle East and thousands of innocent civilians find themselves caught in the ideological political struggles of the major powers on the planet, "someone" is watching.

We, who have been following the phenomena since the 1947 Roswell crash during the testing of the atomic bomb at White Sands Testing Facility, knew someone was watching us then, as someone is watching us now. Those who were in the Pacific campaign during the second world war knew someone was watching especially close to the Island of Titinian while the French were doing nuclear testing off the Hao Reef from 1966-1969, the military knew they were also being watched. Witness testimony from geo-physicist Guy Andronik tells us he saw two different fly-overs of UFOs during that time. In an interview, Andronik told me he was present when they scrambled a plane to follow the intruders. All this says that they must have been the watchers who have a prime directive: Non-interference with a primitive species during their evolutionary period. Looking at this scenario, I believe we have come to a crossroads not only of aggression and war but also of a certain insensitivity to the evidence of Extraterrestrial visitations. Audiences still listen to speakers at conferences but then go home, have a few beers and switch on the game. There seems to be a de-sensitization of these phenomena by our very lifestyle. Recently a close girl friend of mine put it aptly when she said, "I do not want to know if there are UFOs! I have enough to worry about!"

This reminded me of a very discouraging statement made by aeronautics heir John Lear whose father developed the Lear Jet. In a recent interview, he commented on the disclosure efforts of serious researchers in this way:

"T'was a noble effort by noble people. Unfortunately they had not the slightest idea of the ramifications of what they were trying to disclose. In their naive innocence, they assumed they were disclosing the existence of flying saucers from outer space. What they failed to realize is that not everybody is ready for that information. Probably 99 and 99/100% are not. That information would not help them in their daily lives. It would not help them raise their children. It would not help them pay their taxes. It would not provide them with more income. It would not provide them with a new God. As a matter of fact it might destroy their faith in their old God. Those for disclosure only want one thing: they want to prove THEY KNOW THE TRUTH ABOUT FLYING SAUCERS. So do a lot of other people. Get over it. It's an ego trip. Let go. It's not time and won't be time for several generations. Relax; disclosure is none of your business. Have a sip Courvoisier XO and a Cohiba Esplendido and talk about it amongst your friends but don't try to go on Larry King and bang the U.S. Government over the head with a flying saucer. They don't know what's going on either. Have a heart."

He is absolutely correct! This is the pathetic state of affairs on planet Earth in 2006. So some researchers may say" why bother? To add to this negative picture, a famous radio host recently commented about Buzz Aldrin's denial of his sighting UFOs during the Apollo 11 Moon Mission, and he said "again we do not have a shred of 'real evidence' after all this time that proves the existence of UFOs." May I remind him that just because someone of the caliber of Buzz Aldrin denies it, it does not mean all other astronauts do. To add insult to injury, Buzz

Aldrin in that same radio interview used the old "speed of light argument" to explain why ETs can not come here. With discoveries in cutting edge quantum mechanics, we now know that no one in their right mind accepts this argument anymore. This statement sets us back eons. Is it true that we are no further along in acquiring proof after Buzz Aldrin cautiously denied he saw UFOs on the moon?

Of course no one wants to explain the several film canisters that are actually missing from the NASA moon footage in the National Archives. Only Richard Hoagland does. On his website, www.enterprisemission.com, Richard Hoagland is addressing this mystery showing real Apollo 11 Moon Mission photographs. Thank God! In 2006, Richard Hoagland, Steven Greer, Ryan Wood, Bill Hamilton are still plugging away even after the negative John Lear statement. But is it worth all this effort and money that we researchers put into disclosure when the result is total apathy? Maybe it is a problem only in United States. I can only write about what I witnessed this year.

On July 22, 2006, MUFON researcher Alejandro Rojas, passionately orchestrated "Colorado Briefing" on the grounds of the State Capital in Denver, Colorado. Inside the beautiful Greek amphitheater, David Sereda, documentary film maker from California spoke of his film *Dan Akroyd–Unplugged*, Dr. Leo Sprinkle, senior professor and abduction Researcher from the University of Wyoming, spoke about current abduction research and Ryan Wood spoke about his new *Majic Eyes Only* book. Wood explained that there were at least seventy crashes after Roswell that were documented in his book. Denver policeman Ken Storch spoke about Dr. J. Allen Hynek, the Lonnie Zamora case and of his very own sighting of a UFO over Colorado. Lastly, I spoke about the signing of the ET Citizen

Diplomacy effort Hawaii Declaration by former Minister of Defense Paul Hellyer and US Ambassador John McDonald, a formidable cast of credible speakers briefing the Colorado public on the Capital grounds. But maybe John Lear is right. No one really cares. I must admit there was little media attention with approximately thirty people seated in the hot sun while perhaps the rest at home prefer "not to worry about UFOs." We may refer to that as "the agony" of the many disclosure efforts. But still overhead "someone" is watching us!

On the other hand, there is ecstasy in this work. Disclosure goes on in the highest level. Jesse Marcel, Jr. was just of 11 years old when he saw and handled the Roswell debris. He says his dad woke the family up at 3:00 a.m. to spread some of the debris out on the kitchen floor to show it to them. His father was an Intelligence officer and certainly knew the difference between exotic technology and a Mogul balloon. Ironically, in a recent interview, Jesse Marcel, Jr. told me he currently serves in the military and just returned from Iraq. Does he care about disclosure? He certainly does. He sees no conflict of interest.

Jesse Marcel, Jr. said, "I'd like people to know we are not alone in the Universe. These beings may have survived their nuclear conflicts, but I am not sure we will."

He just wrote his account of Roswell in a new book titled *Roswell: It Really Happened*. On the other side of the same coin is Edgar Mitchell's testimony. It was a pleasure but no surprise when I heard Edgar Mitchell, in San Francisco on June 7, 2006 at the Institute of Noetic Sciences lecture, when asked if he believed in UFOs, answer in this way:

"I have never had doubts that of the millions of planets and galaxies out there, that there is life. Yes! I believe in UFOs but I had no personal first hand experiences except that I have been briefed by people "in-the-know," high level superiors, and old

timers who had these particular jobs in Intelligence. They were there especially during the Roswell event and others since then and they had no doubt in their minds because they were there first hand. In addition to that, I had an opportunity to go to the Pentagon with these questions and then to a man in high-level position of intelligence and I told him what I thought; what I heard. He did not know, but he said if that is true he should "know" and he will investigate. Mitchell continued; "People know I am on the Board of NIDS (National Institute of Discovery Science) and I have seen that there are events that are very strange and could be ET related. Certainly we know that the Soviets have had these encounters and have had their Air Force chase them down, unsuccessfully of course. Also the French have put out the "Cometa Report" where high level officers told of their experience and asked their government to take it seriously. Two years ago, Belgium military made their knowledge official and then there are still the reports out of Mexico. So the answer is yes, there is a cover-up."

Mitchell added:

"You want to know why it has been covered up? That story is not too hard to explain. It goes to the mid-1940s since the Roswell incident was in July 1947. At that time President Truman was taking over from Roosevelt. The Army Air Corps became the US Air Force. The OSS had been disbanded and CIA came on board instead. It was not quite sure that anybody knew 'who was on first.' When the Roswell incident took place, a number of people, whom I knew, including Werner Van Braun, were called there to investigate this. A committee of high-level people was set up by Truman. It was a committee called the Military Joint Intelligence Committee and there were twelve individuals, so the abbreviation MAJIC was the name of this organization. Although the name has changed over and over again, that committee still

exists. That is one of the things my contact confirmed. There was an Executive National Security law that was passed and unthinkingly, it was given such power over years that they are accountable to no one. Even presidents at this point, can't adequately have access. Other Presidents have tried but, as far as I know, Eisenhower––and perhaps Kennedy––was the last one to have full access."

These words brought applause. For me, it was one of those ecstatic moments where someone of the caliber of Edgar Mitchell, Apollo 14 astronaut who, like Aldrin, walked on the moon, had the courage to address the UFO question publicly and ask for certain openness.

Likewise, former Minister of Defense, Paul Hellyer, in Canada told me that we needed to know the "whole picture" before countries allocated huge amounts of money to shoot aliens out of the skies. The fact that he used the word "aliens" is significant. We need to be grateful for these small steps in disclosure. They keep us researchers going.

Often, I am asked why I work in this field for information gathering and disclosure? I must admit that I am often discouraged.

I do think of the John Lear "Who cares?" response. Instead I remember Dr. J. Allen Hynek, Colonel Philip Corso, Dr. Michael Wolf Kruvante, Dr John Mack and Monsignor Corrado Balducci, who are no longer with us.

Like them, I believe the following:

1. It is a matter of National Security and we need to know whom we are dealing with before we shoot! It is a political or rather an exopolitical concern especially to finance a "space war," perhaps the next war Werner Von Braun warned us about.

2. If different races visit us, they could have a relationship to us as a human species. Could we be inseminated from the Stars, as most indigenous people believe?

3. If these visitations are of ancient origins, we may need to rewrite our true history and update our archives. That will be essential for future generations.

These are three powerful arguments for continuing UFO research but this brings back to the precarious state of this planet currently at war. As if worrying about UFOs was not enough, I realized after viewing Al Gore's powerful film, *An Inconvenient Truth*, that we have ten years to worry about complete environmental destruction.

In San Francisco, Edgar Mitchell who also saw the film summed it up by saying this:

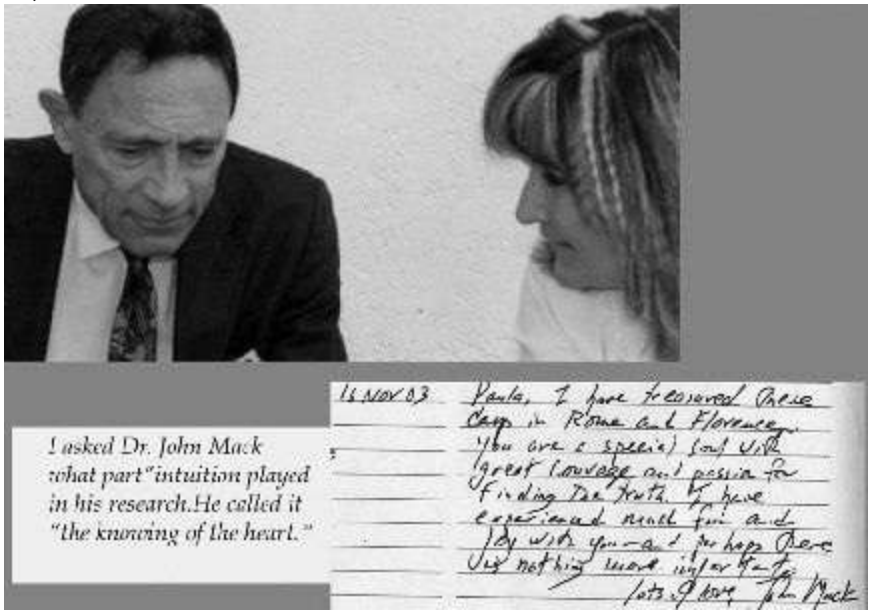
"The reality of this and the ET issue is that we have not been able to move government at any level in our country so other countries will move on it. I, frankly, believe we have far more serious issues right now than the ET presence. If these creatures are benign and there are conflicting stories, they may try to help us out. But it seems they are trying to take a "hands off, wait and see what happens attitude" toward us! Our major problem is sustainability, (survival) and the consumption ethic. All of these facets are about to be featured in brand new ways and Al Gore's environmental global warning is the beginning of it. I'm hoping that we will get all these issues that are hidden and important to our way of life, opened up."

So do I, Dr. Mitchell. Let's hope someone is still watching because we may need to change the Prime Directive and actually ask for help from the stars!

Possible Solutions
Changing Our Worldview: Interview with Dr. John Mack

"We seek a free flow of information. We are not afraid to entrust the American people with unpleasant facts, foreign ideas, alien philosophies, and competitive values. For a nation that is afraid to let its people judge the truth and falsehood in an open market is a nation that is afraid of its people." ––John F. Kennedy

Last interview with Dr. John Mack
Florence, Italy
November, 2004


I asked Dr. John Mack what part "intuition played in his research. He called it "the knowing of the heart."
15 NOV 03
Paola, I have received these
Days in Rome and Florence.
You are a special soul with
great courage and passion for
finding the truth. We have
experienced much fun and
joy with you - and we hope there
will be nothing more unfortunate
Lots of love, John Mack
Pictured: Dr. John Mack and Paola Harris.

Paola: Thank you, John, for accepting the invitation by the very young group of GAUS (Gruppo, Academico Ufologico Scandici) students to speak in Florence. Can you give us an overview of your career and your struggles in this arena? Can you give us your perspective of the abduction phenomena?

Dr. Mack: Sure I can give an overview of the "so called" abduction phenomena and lead into questions of how do we know or what are the ways of knowing when we are dealing with something this strange. I also will discuss the implications of this and phenomena like this for our world. I am a psychiatrist and psychoanalyst and I have a special interest in extraordinary experience.

Paola: Maybe you can also speak to language and how we perceive the world. I, personally, prefer the word "contact" more than abduction, because it has a more positive.

Dr. Mack: This is true. For instance words like "abduction" and alien shape the conversation a certain way. The word "abduction" is off in two different ways. First, it implies that every person who has this encounter experience is taken against his or her will like abduction in human terms. It also implies that each person who has an experience is physically taken; the whole body is taken up into a craft, which is also not true in all instances. Another aspect of contact is transferring information to humans telepathically or showing us images.

Pictured: Paola Harris, Dr. John Mack, Adriano Forgione and Gildas Bourdais.

Paola: So are there particular reasons for this contact. What do your patients or experiencers say?

Dr. Mack: A lot of this information has had to do with what our species are doing that is destructive to our planet. It is as if what we are doing ecologically with the planet is creating some kind of larger problem in the Galaxy. Also the experiencers are given certain skills, certain capabilities that they were not given in their schooling. For instance they may discover that they may have a great artistic ability that comes from this contact. Also they may have been given important mathematical and scientific knowledge that goes way beyond anything they learned in school and yet they are downloaded the most complicated mathematical formulas and when the scientist and physicist recognize that there is truth coming from these individuals and sometimes more than the physicists themselves know, they recognize it as genuine. I have personally seen many examples of these.

Paola: The outside world always wants scientific evidence. What do you tell them?

Dr. Mack: About the question of evidence, how do we know that this experience is true? How do we evaluate these reports and how do we determine truthfulness. For example, when I evaluate, I become clear that people of sound mind have no reason for making up this story. It is sure that they did not get it from the media because often they know more than the media. But there is something missing in what we have to evaluate or determine when a person tells us a story so bizarre whether he/she is telling the truth and whether we should take them seriously. But as yet we have had no criteria to evaluate the truth of such encounters. So I am working on just this and

I'm just beginning to establish a science of human experience. Now in traditional science when we observe certain phenomenon, we bring some objectivity to what we have studied. But when you are trying to understand something so profound and important to a person you cannot stand back but you must enter "into" the consciousness of that person. So what the critics will say "what you are learning is too subjective." Here is the problem, if you are going to learn about something this profound, then the learning needs to be "intersubjuctive. "So still there is the problem of discovering the truth. If I say it just feels like they are telling the truth, then this is not enough. So we have to start with the "holistic way of knowing."

Paola: So how would you describe this way of knowing? Are these reliable witnesses?

Dr. Mack: Well, this is close to what we know as intuitive knowing. It is like a knowing of the heart and a knowing of the spirit that has been part of traditional cultures for hundreds and thousands of years but has been lost in the west. I received some help in this matter from Vatican Representative, Monsignor Corrado Balducci who stated:

"We, in the church, take this UFO encounter phenomena very seriously and the reason for that is, that there seem to be so many reliable witnesses. In the church, we have had centuries of having to evaluate miraculous reports by some kind of criteria and so they had to develop the notion of the "reliable witnesses."

So I began to apply this idea of the reliable witness to these cases. How do we know who is a reliable witness? For my cases, it not only had to do with the fact just that these people who were trustworthy reported something but it had to do with the power of their communication that came across to me. I would

experience with these people when they would be reliving their experience, the most powerful vibration. I was in the presence of something awesome in its intensity. The experiencers themselves would give language to that. They would say something like "every cell in my body was vibrating!" When you are in the presence of that, it passes your judging mind and you feel it in your whole being. Going back to "what is a reliable witness," it has to do with a resonance between the person who is reporting or sharing the experience and the clinician. It might be called a direct knowing. You just know that with your whole being that this person is telling the truth. There are other examples of this "direct knowing" as demonstrated when the tribunal that was hearing testimony of the torture in Bosnia, and questioned witnesses. The judge said after hearing the testimony of a particular woman about how she was tortured." I do not need any more testimony; I can just tell that it is not possible that she is not telling the truth. That is sufficient."

Now everyone knows torture exists. That is accepted. But it is not accepted in our society that these UFO encounters exist. Therefore, you need to have evidence of a pattern of such similarities that is showing up in hundreds, if not, thousands of cases. One of these experiencers is helping me out with this statement she made about witnesses. She said, "When a witness speaks, all recognize that they have been in another realm. Sincerity and truth and power of spirit are just as measurable as inches and pounds but not in the same way."

Paola: I think that it is the culture we live in that thinks all this is "fringe" scenario. It is considered weirdness for them but you said once that not all cultures think this way.

Dr. Mack: True. It is ironic that experiences like alien abduction encounters, UFOs, crop circles, and near-death experiences are

called anomalies. In another words, in our culture, what lies outside the realm of the cultural agreement about what is real is called anomalous. Therefore, a huge amount of human experience is called anomalous when I have discussed this with Native Americans, and they say it is not an anomalous. We know about this. It is part of the human experience.

Paola: I have heard both you and Dr. Edgar Mitchell talk about changing our old paradigm but calling it a new world-view. Can you describe this in what we might consider *exopolitical* terms. We certainly need to do something on this planet.

Dr. Mack: About matter of a worldview and how it works. It has always been referred to as a paradigm and it has more of a scientific meaning. But I prefer to call it world-view because it refers to something bigger. A world-view is the way we organize reality. It is the way we believe things work. In a way it is like an instrument of navigation. Our world-views are what hold the human psyche together. What I came to realize with that Harvard committee was that I was threatening the scientific medical world-view by which they were living. What has been the dominant world-view in our society could be called 'Newtonian-Cartisianism' or Anthropocentric Humanist. It is a world-view that puts the human being as top of the cosmic hierarchy of intelligence. The simplest term for this is; that which I call Scientific Materialism. In this world-view, matter and energy is the primary reality and there is no larger intelligence in the cosmos. The principle method of study is objective reality that separates the investigator from the matter that is being investigated. Now in recent years, this view, which has dominated our society, is failing. It is failing in every important element that the world-view is supposed to serve. First there is a huge amount of phenomena, which it

cannot explain nor deal with. There is no method of study for many things that we are talking about today. Secondly, it leads to terrible destructiveness because it treats the entire planet as simply physical resources to fight over by those who are the most powerful and most important countries.

Thirdly, "scientific materialism" does not give human beings any real satisfaction. It leaves us without spirit and it leaves us with an empty feeling. Because all it has to offer are more and more material things. Now we have new emerging world-views that are different. In this world-view, there is intelligence dwelling in the universe. That experience which happens to my clients is one example of the intelligence dwelling in the universe and the beings that have come to my clients are another example. The crop formations are also evidence of this intelligence that is trying to communicate with us. Also it is a model of the universe and us in it that says that everything is connected with everything else and we know that "cutting edge" physics is supporting this world-view. So it includes not only "new ways of knowing" but it also involves a spiritual awakening. This change that is happening around us is met with enmity and a great deal of resistance because there's a huge psychological economic and political investment in maintaining the old world-view. I will give you one examples of the UFO resistance because books being written which discuss this new paradigm are being called new age, pseudo-scientific, pseudo-centric in order to dismiss them as "out-of-hand" because some people who write such books do not hold themselves responsible to any scientific standards whatsoever. I will conclude by speaking about the implications of this new world-view. We see around us all kinds of forces that are supporting the emergence of this way of thinking. People around the planet are opening up to new ways of thinking.

Groups, like the GAUS, these young people here in Florence, are committed to the new emerging paradigm. How would this planet be different if the emerging world-view became be the dominant world-view? We would be connected to all living beings not just those around us, and with all nature and spirit which would make it impossible for us to treat nature in such an exploitative way. For example, we would be able to identify with other peoples, other religions and with all animals so we would not treat them just as products to consume. With this deeper reality, we could appreciate that we are connected to the Divine, the creative principle that would be more fulfilling than the material focus that has been so dominant today. So it would be global like a 'global awakening of the heart'. Instead of global exploitation, a word that is has that connotation today. I might add the opening of the heart has been a fundamental aspect of alien encounters experience I learned from my dealing with experiencers. Sometimes experiencers get information from these beings that we are not just a menace to the Earth but we are a menace to the Galaxy. In conclusion, as this emerging paradigm this emerging world-view, takes hold, we might become more responsible citizens of a galaxy instead of becoming the eminent menace we appear to be!

Pictured: Dr. John Mack, Paola Harris and "the GAUS kids."

This was one of Dr. John Mack's last interviews and it was very powerful. This philosophy is somewhat sustained in the Einstein-Oppenheimer document when they said:

"It would be difficult to predict what the attitude of International Law would be with regard to the occupation by celestial peoples of certain locations on our planet but the only thing that can be foreseen is that there will be a profound change in traditional concepts."

Epilogue
So, How *Do* We Speak to a Ball of Light?

"*My friend, International journalist researcher, Paola Harris believes that 'we are not alone in the Universe' and that we have hope for the evolution of mankind into a peaceful, cooperative species worthy of joining other civilizations in exploring 'inner' as well as 'outer' space!*" ––Uri Geller

Alien Communication, Remote Viewing, ESP and Psychic Abilities

This book is called *How Does One Speak to a Ball of Light?* for a reason. It addresses possible *exopolitical* challenges and protocols of future contact and among them communication with alien entities. It implies that one cannot use ordinary human-languages to communicate with all things alien.

In this book, I speak of intelligent light spheres who interact with humans and I also speak about the mysterious light spheres that interact with electricity as seen in Caronia in Sicily where the houses seem to self combust without reason. However there seem to be no human causalities that we know of.

The irony is that I have received much criticism for the unconventional title of this book because we think of ETs in terms of greys, nordics and reptilians. This is not always the case.

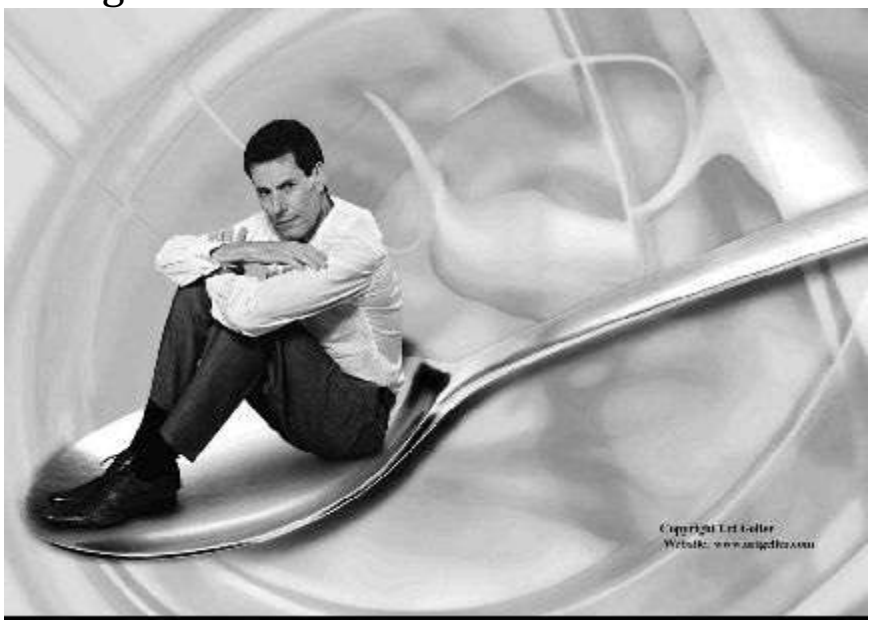
The Use of Telepathy

There are beings among us that range from spheres of light to those completely human. They pique our imagination and our curiosity. It is interesting how today people are ready to

accept the *ABC Family TV* series *Kyle XY*, a major hit. Seemingly an alien, or perhaps a "clone," Kyle has no belly button and sleeps in a bathtub. Kyle is a 16 year-old boy with the mind of a genius. He's found wandering in the streets with no memory of who he is, or where he comes from. He is taken to a youth detention center where he meets Nicole Trager a psychologist who sees that Kyle has these amazing abilities. Not long before she wants to bring him home to her husband and two kids. While staying with the Trager family, Kyle starts to remember his past. Six episodes into its life, *Kyle* became the most-watched original series ever on seen on *ABC Family*. It drew about 2.1 million viewers per week, with close to 800,000 of those falling in the demographic adults 18-49 years old. Matt Dallas stars in the series as Kyle, who has a savant-like intellect but is as naive about the world as a newborn. The reaction of society is the non-acceptance and persecution of anyone who is different and the problem is communication. You cannot lie to Kyle because he uses mental telepathy. He can read your mind. I found this is true of savant clairvoyant thirty-two year old Pascal Riolo, Belgium's most successful psychic who wrote the foreword to this book. It is not his readings for business or for private citizens, nor his spoon bending skills, nor his communication with other dimensions that impress me but his ability to communicate mentally; to see through you with his instant knowing. You cannot lie to Pascal. He can read your intentions.

I was the only journalist who, in an interview, asked how he acquired his abilities. He described a contact experience that reminds me of the light-sphere that activated a four-year old Uri Geller in a park in Tel Aviv, years ago. Instead, this was Belgium. Pascal was five when he inadvertently was separated from his parents at a picnic. He found himself on a beach on top

of a cliff viewing the sea, despondent, and so afraid that he considered throwing himself into the water. He recalls that he then heard a clear voice telling him not to do it. The voice said that he would be important for humanity and that he would help them. What was then quite amazing was that, out of nowhere, a classmate arrived––a small boy like him who took him by the hand back to his parents. (What was this voice, where did it come from and how did it communicate?) Today, this episode stays very vivid in Pascal's mind. He considers this the beginning of his clairvoyant experiences. The use of telepathy, or powers of the mind, is as easy for him as it is for Kyle and, perhaps, for "disembodied intelligences" who interfere with electrical systems and self-combust houses. But, who is speaking to them in this inter-dimensional dialogue?



Pictured: Uri Geller.

Recently Stanford Research Institute physicist, Russell Targ, was amazed when three-quarters of his audience, at a remote viewing conference in Rome, described a hidden slide correctly. Russell Targ has written several books on remote viewing, consciousness and non-locality.

That audience was activated to believe that, with constant practice, they could hone their ESP ability. People want to use this sixth-sense, but they do not realize two very important elements.

1. That you allow many dimensional beings who have access to telepathy into your reality. Because they can read your mind, "you cannot lie."

2. That it could be very dangerous for the masses who are constantly faced with unethical decisions, immoral behavior and subjugation to the powers that rule the Earth. It could border on "mind control."

As the famous remote viewer, Ingo Swann, who collaborated with the United States Intelligence Community said in his book *Penetration* "non-human intelligences were on the dark side of the moon." What is more interesting is he said they were well aware of his presence. They knew he was watching them from Earth. This was obviously a two-way communication. So, who or what is communicating?

Recently at a conference on MJ-12 Documents in Florence Italy, while special guest Ryan Wood spoke about the Roswell crash, two spheres of light, one intensely red and one pulsating white crisscrossed and darted around the room as a participant felt compelled to capture them on video from her cell phone. Is there a scientific explanation for these light spheres or is it a simple communication? Who knows? We should not rule anything out. So maybe there are intelligent balls of light or light beings who are so highly evolved that they can travel between dimensions.

Do Cybernetic Brains exist devoid of bodies? This is the

famous description of the "council of nine" in Phyllis Schlemmer's book *The Only Planet of Choice*. On page five, Gene Roddenberry (creator of *Star Trek*) is told by an entity named "Tom" that nine is a complete number because it is whole and "The Nine" are the aeons which is in truth used to describe a period of time, an eternity. They describe themselves to Roddenberry as the highest form of Celestial Power, spiritual disembodied entities formed from Divine Presence. We know something inspired Roddenberry to create *"Deep Space 9,"* the *Star Trek* sequel.

I believe it is becoming more mainstream to believe in mental communication and the power of telepathy. Television shows taken from real life, like the ever popular *Medium, The Mentalist* and the hit series *Kyle XY*, as well as the increasing popularity of "remote viewing" courses demonstrate that non-verbal communication, ESP and telepathy are a valid form of human communication with cosmic cultures and dimensional beings. They may be among us: perhaps in the form of aliens like *Kyle XY*, perhaps in the form of disembodied intelligences or spheres of light who want to communicate. They may be telling us something important as they dart around the room in Florence or atop a crop circle in England. They could be telling us the following as communicated in a transmission given to Phyllis Schlemmer for the book *The Only Planet of Choice* (page 5).

"We imbue you with energy. We awaken you, as you awaken us. We wish you to know we love you. We wish you to not make gods of us or of yourselves. We thank you."

Appendix: The Hawaii Declaration

Extraterrestrial Civilizations
&
WORLD PEACE
Conference
www.ETWorldPeace.com
June 9 - 11, 2006 Big Island, Hawaii
Extraterrestrial Civilizations & World Peace Conference
June 9-11, 2006. Kona, Hawaii
The Exopolitics Institute is delighted to present the Extraterrestrial Civilizations and World Peace Conference on the Big Island of Hawaii in June 2006. Bringing together a group of extraordinary presenters, this conference will focus upon compelling evidence of a multifaceted extraterrestrial effort to assist the peoples of Earth in establishing world peace, environmental protection, and spiritual upliftment.
Advanced, ethical extraterrestrial civilizations have been visiting the earth with increased frequency since the dawn of the atomic age due to their concerns over the long term effects of nuclear weapons testing and war. Extensive evidence supports testimony from a number of 'whistleblowers' and 'contactees' that some of these extraterrestrial civilizations specifically approached world governments to ask for an end to nuclear weapons development due to dangers yet unknown to our scientists. Dangers which are still affecting the global environment, all species on the planet, and the fabric of time-space itself.
There is further compelling evidence that visiting extraterrestrials have acted to mitigate the most severe aspects of military conflict, environmental degradation and weaponization of space; offering non-carbon energy alternatives; raising human consciousness; and have been actively promoting world peace through 'citizen diplomats'. This international conference will host a select group of experts, dignitaries, and 'citizen diplomats' to address a variety of key issues concerning the relationship between extraterrestrial civilizations and world peace. The conference will produce a 'Declaration' and an 'Action Plan' for how humanity can cooperate with visiting extraterrestrial civilizations to achieve world peace.
$345 Full Conference Pass
Location: This Conference takes place at the King Kamehameha's Kona Beach Hotel in the warm tropics of the Big Island of Hawaii, where the gentle ocean breeze brings the heady scent of Plumeria and Gardenias..and where the calm aqua waters stretch endlessly to the horizon.
--Room Reservations: (800) 367-6060 *Ask for special conference room rates
Join us in the tropical paradise of Hawaii in June, 2006 for this exceptional event.
Sponsored by the Exopolitics Institute: A non-profit organization based in Kealakekua, Hawaii, USA, dedicated to studying the key political actors, institutions & processes associated with credible evidence that extraterrestrial races are visiting, monitoring or residing on Earth. If you would like to find out more about the Institute and its projects, please visit our website: http://www.ExopoliticsInstitute.org
Conference Registration: www.ETWorldPeace.com or Phone: +1 808 325 3400
SPEAKERS
KEYNOTE SPEAKER
Hon Paul Hellyer (former Canadian Defense Minister)
Ambass. John W. McDonald (Inst. for Multi-track Diplomacy)
Brig Gen Stephen Lovekin (U.S. Army, Disclosure Witness)
Paola Harris, M.Ed. (UFO/ Exopolitics Researcher)
Dr. Thomas Hansen (UFO/ Peace Educator, Singer)
Joan Ocean, M.S. (Cetacean Expert & Author)
Alfred Webre, J.D. (Institute for Cooperation in Space)
Jean Ederman (ET Contactee, La Science des Extraterrestres)
Neil Freer (Exoarcheologist, Author-Breaking the Godspell)
Dr C.B. Scott Jones (Peace & Emer. Act. Coalition for Earth)
Capt Robert Salas (ret. US Air Force & Disclosue Witness)
Lt Col Wendelle Stevens ret. (Contactee/UFO Researcher)
Daryl Arika ('Bashar' Channel & Sponsor of ET Contact Act)
James Gilliland (Founder of ECETI & ET Contactee)
Carlos Diaz (ET Contactee)
J.Z. Knight (Ramtha School of Enlightenment Founder)
CONFERENCE CONVENER
Dr. Michal Salla (Exopolitics Researcher, Exopolitics Institute)
CONFERENCE CO-ORGANIZER
Angelika Whitecliff (ET/Angel Communicator & ET Contactee)

Hawaii Declaration on Peaceful Relations with Extraterrestrial Civilizations

We, the individuals and institutions participating in and/or supporting the Extraterrestrial Civilizations & World Peace Conference in Kailua-Kona, Hawaii, June 9-11, 2006;

Are a body of concerned private citizens, who are promoting world peace and harmonious relations with extraterrestrial

civilizations,

Recognizing the overwhelming evidence pointing to the presence of extraterrestrial civilizations, and their generally peaceful interaction with individuals and governmental authorities.

Inspired by the profound significance for humanity of sharing the wisdom, knowledge, culture and technology provided by extraterrestrial civilizations,

Asserting that extraterrestrial civilizations have been observing human evolution for some time with particular interest in humanity's quest for lasting peace among its peoples,

Noting that extraterrestrial civilizations have indicated that the abolishment of nuclear weapons worldwide is a necessary milestone toward peaceful coexistence on earth and as a prerequisite for open contact,

Recalling United Nations resolutions concerning international co-operation in the peaceful exploration and use of outer space, banning atmospheric and underwater nuclear tests, and proscribing hostile acts on the moon and other celestial bodies,

Recognizing a range of initiatives promoted by private citizens and citizen organizations with regard to extraterrestrial civilizations visiting Earth,

Intending for this Declaration to be used as a starting point for a greater public dialogue with those holding similar or diverging perspectives and interests concerning

extraterrestrial visitation,

Using a consensual decision making process among speakers, organizers, and participants at the Extraterrestrial Civilizations and World Peace Conference, 2006, we have agreed to;

Honor the following principles for establishing peaceful relations with extraterrestrial civilizations:

1. We affirm the intent of humanity to join in peaceful and cooperative relations with extraterrestrial civilizations,

2. Affirm support for United Nations resolutions promoting the peaceful use of Outer Space, and support for UN, International and U.S. Congressional initiatives to prevent an arms race in outer space, including the weaponization of space,

3. Affirm the natural right of all citizens to have open contact with representatives of extraterrestrial civilizations in all cases, and to engage in non-official diplomacy,

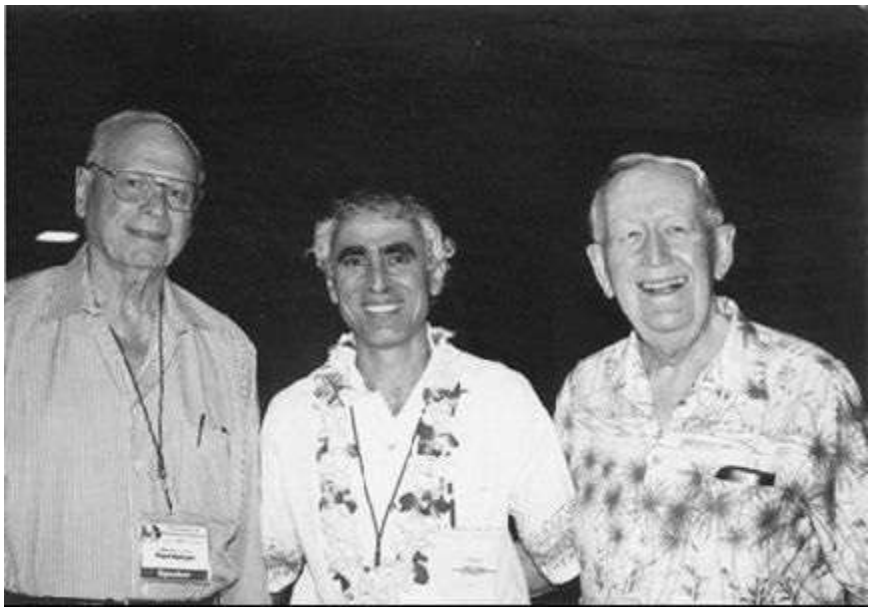
4. Declare the need for Civil Society to develop acceptable protocols (standards of behavior) with extraterrestrial civilizations, that the protocols should be representative of the aspirations of all humanity, and that all nations should work in concert to establish peaceful relations,

5. Cooperate with extraterrestrial civilizations in promoting Earth, Cosmic and Life friendly technologies, and encouraging the right use and open availability of these technologies,

6. Affirm our desire to coordinate the earth's ecological health and biological diversity with extraterrestrial civilizations that can aid us in that endeavor,

7. And express our desire to welcome the open appearance of

benevolent extraterrestrial civilizations.



Pictured: The Honorable Paul Hellyer, Dr. Michael Salla and Ambassador John McDonald.

Conference Organizers and Speakers

Michael E. Salla, Ph.D. (Convenor/Speaker); Angelika Whitecliff (Co-Organizer); Hon Paul Hellyer (Speaker); Thomas Hansen, Ph.D. (Speaker); Joan Ocean, M.Sc. (Speaker); Paola Harris, M.Ed. (Speaker); Alfred Webre, J.D. (Speaker); James Gilliland (Speaker); Robert Salas, (Capt USAF, ret.- speaker); Mary Rodwell, R.N. (Speaker); Neil Freer (Speaker); Scott Jones, Ph.D. (Speaker); Philip Corso, Jr. (Speaker); Darryl Anka (Speaker); Wendelle Stevens (Lt Col. USAF ret. - Speaker);
"A New World if you can take it" (Lt. Col. Philip Corso)

Official Conference website: www.etworldpeace.com
Declaration Online Petition:
www.petitiononline.com/ETPeace/petition.html
Conference Sponsor is the Exopolitics Institute:
www.exopoliticsinstitute.org

Kailua-Kona, Hawaii, June 11, 2006
Copyright © 2006 Exopolitics Institute

Recommended Reading

The following books helped me to "connect the dots":

The 12th Planet, Zecharia Sitchin

Alien Rapture, Ed Fouche

Briefings on the Future Landing on Planet Earth, Stuart Holroyd

The Catchers of Heaven, Dr. Michael Wolf

Close Extraterrestrial Encounters, Dr. Richard Boylan

Cosmic Explorers, Dr. Courtney Browne

Cosmic Top Secret, Bill Hamilton

The Day after Roswell, Colonel Philip Corso

The Deepening Complexity of Crop Circles: Scientific Research & Urban Legends, Eltjo Haselhoff

Destiny Matrix, Dr. Jack Sarfatti

Gene Roddenberry: The Last Conversation, Yvonne Fern

Glimpses of Other Realities, Linda Moulton Howe

Milabs, Helmut Lammer

Miracles of the Mind, Dr. Russell Targ and Jane Katra

The Monuments of Mars, Richard Hoagland

The Only Planet Of Choice, Phyllis Schlemmer

Open Minds, Closed Skies, Nick Pope

Opening Minds: A Journey of Extraordinary Encounters, Crop Circles and Resonance, Dr. Simeon Hein

The Path of the Explorer, Dr. Edgar Mitchell

Passport to the Cosmos, Dr. John Mack

Penetration: The Question of ET and Human Telepathy, Ingo Swan

Soul Samples: Personal Exploration in Reincarnation and UFO Experience, Dr. Leo Sprinkle

The Stargate Conspiracy, Lyn Pickett and Clive Prince

The Terra Papers, Robert Momingsky

The UFO Experience, Dr. J. Allen Hynek

UFOs Are Real, Clifford Stone

Underground Bases and Tunnels, Dr. Richard Sauter

Unorthodox Encounter, Uri Geller

Uri, Andrija Puharich

Witnessed, Budd Hopkins

About the Author

Paola Leopizzi Harris (Italy, Europe, Vatican) is an Italo-American photojournalist and investigative reporter in the field of extraterrestrial related phenomena research. She is also a widely published free-lance writer, especially in Europe. She has studied extraterrestrial related phenomena since 1979 and is on personal terms with many of the leading researchers in the field. From 1980-1986 she assisted Dr. J. Allen Hynek with his UFO investigations and has interviewed many top military witnesses concerning their involvement in the government truth embargo. She has been an investigator of the UFO Phenomena since 1980.

In 1997, Ms. Harris met and interviewed Col. Philip Corso in Roswell, New Mexico and became a personal friend and confidante. She was instrumental in having his book *The Day After Roswell,* for which she wrote the preface, translated into Italian. She has just written the preface for the Italian edition of Dr. Edgar Mitchell, Apollo 14 astronaut's book, *The Way of the Explorer*.

She returned to Roswell, New Mexico in the summer of 2003 for the American debut of her book *Connecting the Dots: Making Sense of the UFO Phenomena*. She debuted her second book in Roswell at the 60th anniversary celebration. It is titled *Exopolitics: How does one speak to a Ball of Light? Exopolitical Challenges and Protocols for Future Contact* and it speaks of the Orb and Light Sphere Phenomena including the spheres seen during StS-75 NASA Footage. Her third book *Exopolitics: All the Above* is dedicated to George Noory, *Coast to Coast* AM radio host, has become a best seller. Her latest book, *Exopolitics: Gateway to a New Reality*, debuted in January, 2011 is filled

with credible witness testimonies interviews and spiritual solutions to transforming Planet Earth.

Paola is interviewed in the video Fastwalkers, released by Safespace producer Robert Miles and she appears in New Paradigm Films' UFO and ET documentary The Day Before Disclosure. Her interview of former Canadian Minister of Defence Paul Hellyer has been translated into six languages and is currently on YouTube.

Paola has spoken throughout Europe (Ireland, England Switzerland, Spain, France, Germany, Italy and Belgium) about the importance of full disclosure. Her non-profit association, StarworksUSA, promotes disclosure and Exo-political dialogue worldwide.

Paola has a regular column in *X-Times* and *Area 51* UFO magazines; and has written for *Nexus,* Australia; *Explora*; *Open Minds Magazine* and other publications.

Paola lives in Rome, Italy and Boulder, Colorado and has a Masters degree in Education. She teaches history, photo-journalism and on-line classes in *Exopolitics* for Dr. Michael Salla's *Exopolitics Institute* for which she is International Liaison Director.

Other book by Paola Harris are available on Amazon.

Visit the Author Online:
www.starworksusa.com
www.paolaharris.com
http://www.facebook.com/PaolaHarris.Author

Email Inquiries to mailto:paolaharris@hotmail.com